

## BLACKWELL.

### THE BLACKWELL COAT OF ARMS

*Arms:* Argent, a Talbot courant, sable on a chief decette of the second three besants. *Crest:* A demi Talbot coupé proper of the second, a helmet. *Motto:* *Malo mori quam foedari* (I had rather die than be dishonored). The dog indicates service to the king as a courier, messenger or ambassador. The three besants (circles) represent Saracen coins with which the crusaders used to decorate their shields. The helmet represents knighthood.



# BLACKWELL GENEALOGY

\* \* \* \*

COMMANDER E. M. BLACKWELL  
U. S. NAVY, RETIRED



RICHMOND, VIRGINIA  
OLD DOMINION PRESS, INC.  
MCMXLVIII

**COPYRIGHT 1948**  
**OLD DOMINION PRESS, INC.**  
**RICHMOND, VIRGINIA**



# CONTENTS

iii

## ANCESTORS, DESCENDENTS AND CONNECTIONS OF MOORE CARTER AND SARAH ALEXANDER (FOOTE) BLACKWELL

### Index of Families

	Page No.
1. Blackwell .....	1
Davis	
Garth	
Johnson	
Perry	
Pickett	
Rose	
Talbot	
Tackney	
2. Alexander .....	31
3. Ball .....	35
Washington	
4. Bowen .....	38
5. Carter .....	46
6. Chapman .....	52
Colonial Dames	
7. Conway .....	58
8. Edmonds .....	61
9. Eustace .....	74
10. Fleet .....	76
11. Foote .....	77
12. Gaskins .....	80
13. Grayson .....	81
14. Jeffries .....	85
15. Keith .....	87
16. Lee .....	91
17. Smith (or Smythe) .....	94
18. Steptoe .....	104
19. Stuart (or Stewart) .....	106
Family Sketches and Narratives .....	108



# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

v

Blackwell Coat of Arms.....	Frontispiece
Captain Moore Carter Blackwell.....	Facing page 2
Sarah Alexander (Foote) Blackwell.....	" " 2
Bethel Methodist Church.....	" " 18
Moore Carter Blackwell.....	" " 19
Sarah Alexander (Foote) Blackwell.....	" " 19
Elizabeth Moore Blackwell.....	" " 20
James Eustace Blackwell.....	" " 20
Doctor Edward Maurice Blackwell, U. S. Navy.....	" " 21
Lucian Alexander Blackwell.....	" " 21
Sarah A. Blackwell and Six Daughters.....	" " 24
Sunny Side, home of M. C. Blackwell.....	" " 25
Moore C. and Sarah A. Blackwell on porch, Sunny Side..	" " 25
Gentley, home of A. J. Bowen. Family on porch.....	" " 42
Christ Church, built by Robert (King) Carter.....	" " 50
Sabine Hall, built by Robert Carter for his son, Landon..	" " 51
Colonel John Singleton Mosby, C. S. A.....	" " 120



## P R E F A C E

The author and compiler has undertaken this work in order to hand down to future generations of the family a record of their ancestry. We should take pride in our ancestry and should leave a record of which our descendants should be proud and not ashamed. So many of the present generation know little or nothing of their antecedents and seem to care less, which is very regrettable, unless their ancestors have been such characters that they would gladly forget them. In recent years, a number of wealthy families from the North and elsewhere have settled in and around Warrenton, Virginia, some whose only claim to gentility is the money they have. One of these was talking about a very old and respected family of the neighborhood and said they were "not much". The lady to whom he was talking said to him, "They can trace their ancestry back ten or twelve generations of honorable service to the country; but you don't know who your grandfathers were."

The history of the country is only the history of the people who have left their impress upon it. While there are a few who stand out in valor, heroism, patriotism, science, literature, philanthropy and statesmanship, it is the great majority, who, by their thrift, industry, enterprise, business capacity, morality and devotion to duty, have made the country what it is. So let us give to our God, country and fellowman the best that is in us, and, when the last day comes, when our eyes grow dim and our senses and desires fail, the fact and consciousness that we have "quitted ourselves like men" and done our best, will be the great and only consolation we will have.

The compiler and author has endeavored to trace the Blackwell lineage from the earliest known ances-

tors to the latest descendants; but he has not gone into as much detail with the connections of the family.

The information contained herein has been obtained from various works in the Library of Congress, Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, Hardy's Colonial Families of the Southern States of America and from family records and statements. It has been the author's endeavor to trace the direct lines of the collateral branches from the earliest records down to their connection with the Blackwell family. The generations are generally dated from the first settlers who came to this country.

The family jokes and stories are personal experiences and recollections of the author, and narratives told by older members of the family and acquaintances.

The memoirs are a record of the author's early life at his home, Sunny Side, near Warrenton, Va., teaching school, the study and practice of medicine, his life in the Navy during the Spanish-American War and the World War I, and after his retirement.

BOOK ONE

ANCESTORS, DESCENDENTS AND  
CONNECTIONS OF MOORE CARTER  
AND SARAH A. (FOOTE) BLACKWELL





## 1. Blackwell Ancestry

The Blackwells are descendants of old English families found in many parts of England, Scotland and Wales. They are quite numerous in the counties of Derby, Durham, Cumberland, Gloucester and Worcester. Blackwell is an old Gloucestershire name, probably derived from the parish of Blackwell in the neighboring county of Worcester and there are other Blackwell parishes in Derby near Alfreton and another in Durham near Darlington. Other forms of the name are Blackwill, Blackwall and Blakewell.

Early records of the name are:

Margery de Blackwelle—County Cambridgeshire 1273

Thomas Blackwell 1379 (P. T. Yorks)

Margareta Blackwell 1375 (P. T. Howdenshire)

Richard Blackwell—County Derbeshire (Reg. Univ. Oxf. Vol. 11)

Jno. Blackwell—County Gloucestershire (Reg. Univ. Oxf. Vol. 11)

Wm. Blackwell. M. Jemima Fowle 1753 (St. Geo. Chap. Mayfair)

Alexander Blackwell. D. 1747. Was physician in ordinary to the King of Sweden.

Elizabeth Blackwell. 1737. A botanical delineator.

George Blackwell. (1545 - 1613) Archpriest. Grad. Trinity College, ordained priest 1575, appointed Archpriest 1598.

John Blackwell. (1797 - 1840) Poet.

Thomas (the elder) Blackwell (1660 - 1728) Scottish Divine. Presbyterian Minister at Paisley 1694 and at Aberdeen 1700. Professor of Divinity at Mareschal College 1710 - 1728.

Thomas Blackwell, the younger (1701 - 1757) Classical scholar, Professor of Greek, Mareschal College 1723-57

The name Blackwell appears in the records of Sandwich, Mass., as early as 1637 and there is a record of Jeremy Blackwell, aged 18, who came to New England in the "Truelove" in 1635.

The Blackwells of Virginia are descended from an ancient English family, probably from Amprey Park,

Gloucester County. The Merchant Taylors Company, London, was licensed by Edward I as The License Armourers. Henry VII gave them Charter under the name of Masters and Wardens of the Fraternity of St. John Baptist of London. Edward IV incorporated them and gave them Arms. Henry VII being member of the Company, transferred them to The Merchant Taylors Company. In 1607, when James I dined with the Company, Richard Langley showed him the roll wherein were registered 7 Kings, 1 Queen, 17 Princes, 17 Dukes, 2 Duchesses, 1 Archbishop, 3 Earls, 5 Countesses, 14 Bishops, 66 Barons, 2 Ladies, 9 Abbots, 7 Priors, 1 Suferon and a great number of Knights and Esquires who had been framers of the Company. Among the most illustrious apprentices of the Company were Sir John Hawkins, Sir Joseph Blackwell, Sir Wm. Fitzhugh, Lord High Admiral to Henry VIII and Earl of Southampton. This Company was the incorporators of the Second Virginia Charter.

The Alumni Oxiciuses of 1890 gives the following Blackwell graduates of Oxford but gives no indication of which one came to Virginia.

Geo. Blackwell, Scholar, Trinity College, made Cajetane Cardinal.

Robt. Blackwell, Northhante, Pleb. Magdalena College, Mat. June 8, 1604.

Jno. Blackwell, Gloucester Co., Cler. fils. Exeter College, Mat. Dec. 13, 1615.

Andrew Blackwell, B. A. Exeter College, Mat. June 25, 1617.

Jno. Blackwell, Notts, St. Edmund Hall, Mat. June 26, 1621

Ralph Blackwell, Notts, St. Edmund Hall, Mat. June 26, 1621.

Simon Blackwell, Cler. fils, Gloucester Co., Mat. June 23, 1621.

Col. Thos. Blackwell, Notts, Knighted 27 Dec., 1642 and created D. C. L. June 10, 1644.

Francis Blackwell, B. A., July 14, 1649, served in the Parliamentary Forces.

Chas. Blackwell, Cler. fils. Christ Church, Mat. Nov. 14, 1651.



Sarah Alexander (Foote) Blackwell.



Capt. Moore Carter Blackwell, CSA.



Jos. Blackwell, Pleb. Trinity College, Mat. July 2, 1658  
(He was probably the son of first settler Jos. Blackwell  
who was sent over to Northd. Co., Va. by Chas. I in  
1636 as King's Surveyor.)

Wm. Blackwell, Privilegiatus, Sept. 22, 1666, age 35.

There is a tradition that has been handed down in the family that three Blackwell brothers emigrated from England to the Colonies early in the 17th Century. They were men of high standing and education, being graduates of Oxford. In 1908 I was informed by Mr. Edgar Blackwell of Tipirs P. O. and Wicomico Church, Northumberland Co., Va., and the oldest Blackwell in that section, that the first settler was Joseph Blackwell who was sent over by Charles I in 1636 as "King's Surveyor" and he was given a seal with the Blackwell Coat of Arms on it, probably the seal for his official papers. In 1909, Mr. Blackwell's son, Harding, visited me at the Naval Academy, Annapolis, Maryland, and showed me this seal of which I made several wax impressions. In 1936 I visited Mr. Harding Blackwell at his residence "East Gascony", Rehoboth Church, Northumberland Co., Virginia, and he again showed me the seal. From this it would appear that Joseph Blackwell, King's Surveyor, 1636, was the first emigrant to Virginia. He was probably a young man and may not have remained permanently in Virginia, but went back to England and educated his son Joseph (Pleb, Trinity College, Mat. July 2, 1658), who came later to Virginia. Honorable Joseph Blackwell, King's Surveyor, the progenitor of the Virginia family, is supposed to have been the eldest of the three brothers who emigrated early in the 17th century.

Honorable Robert Blackwell, the progenitor of the Newton (Long Island) family came to New York a widower with several children. He married Mary Manning, daughter of Captain John Manning, who owned Vierken, on Hog Island, in East River which was confiscated from the Dutch in 1651. It was called

Manning Island and later it was called Blackwell's Island when Robert Blackwell came into possession of it. Robert Blackwell also owned Ravenswood, now Long Island City in Brooklyn. He died in 1717, leaving issue.

Honorable Samuel Blackwell, the progenitor of the Carolina family, located in what is now Caswell Co., North Carolina and called his estate Blackwells. The village of Blackwells is now on what was his estate, and is named for his branch of the family. He left issue, but the name of his wife is unknown.

The Blackwells of Virginia have ever been prominent in affairs of Church and State. There is a marble tablet in the Court House at Heathsville, Northumberland Co., Va., to the memory of a number of this family.

It reads thus:

Samuel Blackwell, 1680 - 1732, Vestryman and Justice.

Captain Samuel Blackwell, 1710 - 1762, Member of Legislature and Vestryman.

Wm. Blackwell, 1713 - 1772, Sheriff, Fauquier Co., Virginia.

John Blackwell, Revolutionary Patriot.

Joseph Blackwell, Revolutionary Patriot.

Col. Samuel Blackwell, 1785 - 1833.

Major Hiram Blackwell, War of 1812.

Col. Ferdinand Blackwell, Commonwealth's Attorney, 1846 - 1856.

Lieut. Oscar Blackwell, C. S. A., 1861 - 1865.

Lieut. T. E. Blackwell, C. S. A., 1861 - 1865.

(Moore Carter Blackwell, my father, was grandson of Jos. Blackwell).

Honorable Joseph Blackwell's (King's Surveyor, 1636) estate was the "Poplars". In 1936 I visited the place. Only the dining room and kitchen of the original residence remained, a new building having been erected where the front stood. He also owned "Walnut Lodge" where many of the family are buried. Only the foundation remains, with a frame house rebuilt on it, and the cemetery has been destroyed.

1- Joseph Blackwell, Pleb., Trinity College, matriculated July 2, 1658, was probably the son of Joseph Blackwell, King's Surveyor. The name of his wife is not known. He had issue, Samuel, and probably others.

2- Samuel Blackwell, born 1680, died 1732, succeeded to Walnut Lodge and was influential in Church and State. He was a Vestryman and Justice. He married in 1709 Margery (Downing) Hudnall, a widow, daughter of Honorable Wm. Downing, b. 1668, of Northumberland Co., Va., son of John Downing, b. 1645, member House of Burgesses 1693. He had the following issue, and perhaps others:

3-1 Capt. Samuel Blackwell, born 1710, died 1762, Vestryman and Burgess, 1742-1744, and of the Assembly, 1742-1747. Married Elizabeth Steptoe, daughter of Jno. and Elizabeth (Eustace) Steptoe and had issue of one son and two daughters.

3-2 Col. William Blackwell, born 1713 in Northumberland Co., Va., died 1772 in Fauquier Co., Va. Took an active and prominent part in Church and State and served as High Sheriff of Fauq. Co., 1766. His descendants are known as the "White Blackwells" as they were of the blond type. He married Elizabeth Crump, born 1717, died 1801. She was a sister of the noted Crump Brothers: Geo. Sam'l., Wm., Jno., and Jos. The issue of Wm. Blackwell and Elizabeth Crump were twelve, as follows:

4-1 Hannah, married Simpson.

4-2 Samuel, died unmarried.

4-3 John of Fauq. Co., married first, Judith Churchill, second, Ann Blackwell, his cousin, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Steptoe) Blackwell of North'd Co.

4-4 Capt. William of Fauq. Co., who served with distinction in the Revolution. He m. the widow Foote, who m. Dr. Graham, after his death.

4-5 Col. Joseph of whom later.

4-6 Sarah m. John Roberts.

- 4-7 Daughter, who m. Mr. Taylor of Kentucky.
- 4-8 Capt. Thomas of whom later.
- 4-9 Lucy m. first Moses Green of Fauq. Co.; second, Wm. Pickett of Fauq. Co.
- 4-10 Susannah m. Col. Jno. Green, Culpepper Co.
- 4-11 Nancy m. her cousin Jno. Blackwell of North'd Co., son of Samuel Blackwell and Elizabeth (Stephoe) Blackwell.
- 4-12 Elizabeth, m. 1764, Capt. Wm. Edmonds of Fauq. Co., who served as Captain under Braddock in the French and Indian War, 1761 and as Col. in the Revolution. Their issue were eleven (11) (see Edmonds lineage).
- 1-5 Col. Joseph Blackwell of "Elk Run", Fauq. Co., fifth born of Col. Wm. and Elizabeth (Connup) Blackwell b. 1755, d. 1823. He served with distinction in the Revolution as 2nd Lieut. 10th Virginia Regiment from February to November 1777 when he was commissioned 1st Lieut. serving until May 1781 when he was made Captain and served until the surrender. He was in his brother Capt. Thomas Blackwell's Company in Col. Edward Stevens 10th Virginia Regiment which was consolidated in September 1778 with the 6th Virginia Regiment and known thereafter as the 6th Virginia Regiment and was commanded by Col. Thos. Marshall of Oak Hill, Va. He was in the battles of Harlem Hts., Princeton, Trenton, Brandywine and Charleston, S. C., where he was taken prisoner in May 1780 and exchanged in June 1781. He received 4000 acres of land in 1783 and 1333½ acres in 1806 for his services. By his father's will he received 7000 acres. He m. 1st Ann Grayson Gibson dau. of Col. Jno. and Mary (Brent) Gibson, 2nd 1802 Mary Waddy Brent, dau. of Capt. Wm. and Hannah (Neale) Brent of Dumfries, Prince William Co., Va. Issue six (6) by 1st and four (4) by 2nd. m.
- 4-8 Capt. Thomas Blackwell, b. 1753, d. 1831, fifth son of Col. Wm. and Elizabeth (Crumpp) Blackwell, served with distinction in the Revolutionary War as



Capt. 10th Va. Regiment under Col. Edward Stevens. In the early part of the 19th century, he moved from Culpepper to Union Co., Kentucky, and he received 4000 acres of land in 1783 and 1333½ in 1806. He m. Judith Grant of Fauq. Co., Va., in Sept., 1781. Their issue were two, Grant and Thomas.

3-3 Col. Joseph Blackwell, Sr. of Fauq. Co., Va. was the third son of Hon. Samuel and Margery (Downing-Huduell) Blackwell. He was b. July 9, 1715 in Northumberland Co., Va. and died in Fauquier Co. in 1787. He was educated at Oxford, England and returned to the Colonies and took an active part in Church and State. He served in the Revolution with his three sons, Samuel, Joseph and John. He was appointed Lieutenant when he was 61 years old and served until 1778 when he resigned on account of ill health. He was in Capt. John Chilton's Company of the Third Virginia Regiment, commanded by Co. Thomas Marshall of Oak Hill, Virginia, the father of John Marshall, later Chief Justice of the United States, who served in the same Company Regiment.

Joseph Blackwell and his children, having dark hair, were called the "Black-Blackwells."

Joseph Blackwell, Sr. was appointed the first High Sheriff of Fauquier County, then a part of Prince William County. On one occasion he was ordered to arrest a lawless character, who threatened him with a rifle. He told the man, "I am ordered to arrest you and I am going to do it; you may kill me but you will be hung." The man submitted and afterward became very friendly.

In 1757 he was appointed by the Vestry of Hamilton Parish to go to Richmond to prefer charges against the dissolute Rector John Brunskill, Jr. The vestry consisted of John Wright, John James, William Blackwell, Joseph Huduell, Richard Hampton, Wharton Ransdell, William Rousseau, George Neavill, Joseph Blackwell, Elias Edmonds, Benjamin Bullitt and George Crump.

In view of these charges, Brunskill was ordered to

appear before a council May 19, 1757. The council consisted of Governor Dinwiddie, Wm. Fairfax, John Blair, Wm. Nelson, Thos. Nelson, Philip Grymes, Peter Randolph, Richard Corbin, Philip Ludwell, Mr. Commissary (Dawson) and Philip Ludwell Lee. The Council found the charges true and the Governor issued an order to exclude Brunskill, which was done although it was protested by Brunskill.

In the courthouse at Warrenton is an old document signed by Gov. Francis Fauquier given at Williamsburg Nov. 2, 1761 with the King's Seal appointing as Justices of the Peace:

Thos. Harrison, Jos. Blackwell, Jno. Wright, Wm. Blackwell, Jno Bell, Wm. Eustace, Wm. Grant, Jno. Crump, Duff Green, Yelverton Peyton, Col. Thomas Marshall of Oak Hill, Elias Edmonds, Thomas McClanahan, William Ransdell, Armistead Churchill, Jr., Thomas Bell, William Edmonds, Gilson Foote, Jeremiah Daniel, John Frogge and Richard Foote of Prince William and Fauquier Counties.

Joseph Blackwell Sr. and Colonel Thomas Harrison represented Prince William County in the House of Burgesses from 1748 to 1755.

The oldest house in Warrenton, Va. was owned by Joseph Blackwell, Sr. It is a frame house with a stone and brick basement, which was used during World War I by the Red Cross and other benevolent societies. It is on the right side of the street, in the first block, from the post office on Main Street, to the railway station. It has recently been acquired by Walter Chrysler, the automobile man, who is going to restore it to its original appearance and condition.

Joseph Blackwell, Sr. married Lucy Steptoe, dau. of John and Elizabeth (Eustace) Steptoe. Their issue were four sons and five daughters as follows:

4-1 Elizabeth; 4-2 Capt. Samuel; 4-3 Ann;  
4-4 Lucy; 4-5 Letitia; 4-6 Major Joseph;  
4-7 George; 4-8 General John; 4-9 Judith;  
all of whom later

4-1 Elizabeth b. 1742, m. Col. Chilton of "Herford",

Prince Georges Co., Va. b. 1741, son of Thos. and Jemima (Cook) Chilton of Westmoreland Co., Va.

4-2 Capt. Samuel, b. 1745 in Fauq. Co. di. 1783 in North'd Co., was the 2nd born of Col. Joseph and Lucy (Steptoe) Blackwell. He was a graduate of Oxford, England and was educated for the ministry; but at the outbreak of the Revolution, he entered the Army and served with distinction as Captain. He received 4000 acres of land for his services and was a staunch supporter of the Episcopal Church. He m. Elizabeth Tyler, a cousin of President John Tyler. Their issue were 1 William Henry, 2 Richard, 3 Samuel and 4 Alice, all of whom went to Alabama.

4-3 Ann, b. 1747, d. prior to 1800, m. 1764 Col. Martin Pickett, 2nd Battalion Va. Militia, of "Paradise" Warrenton, Fauq. County, Va. eldest son of William and Elizabeth (Cook) Pickett of Fauq. Co. He was born 1740 in King George Co., Va., d. 1804 in Fauq. Co., Va. He served three terms as a Burgess and represented Fauq. in the Convention of Williamsburg 1776 which declared Virginia independent of the British Empire and a Sovereign State. He was also a delegate to the Convention of 1788 which accepted the Constitution of the United States. He served with distinction in the French and Indian War 1761 as Lieutenant in Capt. Wm. Edmond's Co. of Virginia Troops, and in the Revolution as Lieut. Colonel of the 3rd Virginia Regiment of Inf. under Col. Thomas Marshall of "Oak Hill". He was Tax Commissioner of Fauq. Co. 1782, Coroner 1783, High Sheriff 1785. He was a staunch supporter of the Episcopal Church, a Vestryman and a most generous and public spirited citizen. He gave the land on which the Town Hall of Warrenton is built and also that on which the churches that were established before his death were built. He made his will May 4, 1803 and Codicils which were probated April 24, 1804.

4-4 Lucy, b. 1749, m. Wm. Slaughter, Fauq. Co., Va. and had issue unknown.

4-5 Letitia, b. 1750, m. 1768, Capt. John Chilton of

"Rock Spring," Prince William Co., son of Thomas and Jemima (Cook) Chilton, Westmoreland Co.

4-6 Joseph, b. 1752 of whom later.

4-7 George Steptoe, b. 1753.

4-8 General John Blackwell of Fauquier, b. 1755, d. 1808. He entered the Revolution as a Lieutenant and was promoted to Captain 1777 and served until January 1781 in the 3rd Virginia Regiment commanded by Col. Thomas Marshall of "Oak Hill." (As a collateral descendant of Gen. John Blackwell, who was an original member of the Cincinnati Society, the author was admitted to membership in the Virginia Society in 1936 and is the first and only descendant admitted to date.) He signed the "Westmoreland protest" at the Call of Henry (Light Horse Harry) Lee, in February 1776. He was High Sheriff of Fauquier from 1783 to 1785 and County Lieutenant. He was made General of Virginia Militia in 1794 and received 5166½ acres of land in 1783 for his services as Captain. He m. (1st) 1779 Agatha Ann Eustace b. 1765, d. after 1795, dau. of Isaac and Agatha (Conway) Eustace of Stafford Co., Va. (2nd) Judith (Lee) Pierce-Peachy, widow of Pierce and Peachy and dau. of Kendall and Betty (Heale) Lee; (3rd) his 1st cousin Nancy Blackwell; issue by 1st marriage were as follows:

5-1 Lucy Steptoe b. 1785, d. 1817, m. (1st) 1805 Hugh R. Campbell; 2nd) 1816 Rawleigh Wm. Downman of "Belle Isle" son of Raleigh and Frances (Ball) Downman.

5-2 Steptoe, b. 1786, d. unknown.

5-3 Agatha b. 1788, m. Charles Bell and moved to Ohio.

5-4 Eloise, b. 1790, m. Mark Anthony Chilton, the son of Col. Charles and Elizabeth (Blackwell) Chilton and moved to Missouri.

5-5 John Eustace of Fauquier Co., b. 1793 and m. Ricey Morris.

5-6 William b. 1795, moved to West Virginia, d. unknown. Issue by 2nd marriage.

5-7 Emma, b. 1798, d. 1845, m. 1815 George Wm. Downman, b. 1794, son of Jos. Ball and Olivia (Payne) Downman.

5-8 Ann Eliza, b. 1800, d. 1847, m. in 1817 Dr. James Kendall Ball of Edgewood, Lancaster Co., Va., son of Col. James and Frances (Downman) Ball of Bewdley.

4-9 Judith, b. 1759, d. 1857, m. 1774 Capt. Thomas Keith, son of Rev. James Keith and Mary Isham (Randolph) Keith.

4-6 Major **Joseph Blackwell** of Fauquier Co., Va. b. 1752, d. circ. 1805; was the sixth born of Col. Joseph and Lucy (Steptoe) Blackwell. He took a prominent and active part in the affairs of Church and State; Vestryman of Dittingon Parish, Prince William Co., Va. and later Fauquier. He signed the Westmoreland Protest Feb. 26, 1776 at the call of Henry (Light Horse Harry) Lee and served in the Revolutionary War. He was with his brother John (4-8) in the Brandywine Campaign and when he was disabled by small pox injuring his eyes, he was transferred to Richmond, Va. and served as Major in the Subsistence Department of the Virginia Line until the end of the War. He was an original member of the Cincinnati Society and Dr. Karl S. Blackwell, deceased, of Richmond, Va. was admitted to membership in the Society as a hereditary member in 1936, and was the first and only descendant of his admitted up to that time.) He received a large grant of land in Kentucky for his services. He married 1783 Anne (Eustace) Hull, widow of Capt. Edward Hull, killed in the War while enforcing conscription. She was the dau. of Isaac and Agatha (Conway) Eustace of Stafford Co., Va. Their issue were as follows:

5-1 Ann. 5-2 Joseph.

5-3 John. 5-4 Agatha.

5-5 Lucy. 5-6 William.

5-7 **James**. All of whom later.

5-1 Ann Blackwell, b. 1786, d. 1873, m. 1802 John

Hancock Gaskins, b. 1781, d. 1851, son of Jno. Hancock and Frances Sarah (Cole) Gaskins. Issue See Gaskins.

5-2 Joseph Blackwell, b. 1788, m. Elizabeth Blackwell Edmonds, b. 1791, d. 1860. Issue.

6-1 Octavia Edmonds, m. 1832, John Chilton.

6-2 Elizabeth Miller, m. 1835, James Henry Edmonds. See issue under Edmonds.

6-3 Jane, b. 1820, d. about 1880, unnm.

6-4 to 6-7 Ann, Joseph, Elias and Frances, d. young

6-8 James De Ryter, Blackwell C.S.A. b. 1825, d. circ. 1895. Educated at Dickinson College, Pa., and Randolph Macon College, Va.; was admitted to the bar 1860. He was a lawyer, wrote two volumes of poems, and later taught school at Bethel Military Academy. He m. 1851 Judith Emma Edmonds, dau. of Capt. Elias Edmonds III of Fauquier Co. and lived at "Oak Spring" near Warrenton. Their issue were:

7-1 Francis, b. 1852, m. Elizabeth R. Smith, dau. of Robt. and Mary (Hooe) Smith.

7-2 Joseph W., b. 1854, d. Circ. 1920, unnm.

7-3 Elias Edmonds, b. 1855, m. circ. 1880, Frances Grayson Blackwell, dau. of Moore Carter and Sarah Alexander (Foote) Blackwell. He d. 1937 at his home "Half Way" near Warrenton. See issue under M. C. Blackwell.

7-4 Edmonia, d. young.

7-5 Elizabeth Miller, b. circ. 1860, d. circ. 1900, unnm.

7-6 Adeline, b. 1865 and inherited "Oak Spring," d. 1938, unnm.

7-7 Austin E., b. circ. 1868, d. 1935, unnm.

7-8 James De Ryter, b. 1870, m. 1910 Harriet A. Hall of Seattle. He was City Engineer of Seattle, Washington from 1920 to 1928. d. 1936. m. 2nd Miss Jamieson. Issue 1st Marriage.

8-1 Harriet b. circ. 1911.

8-2 Austin b. circ. 1913.

- 5-3 John Blackwell, b. 1791, d. 1866, m. 1st 1819 Rebecca Davenport, dau. of John and Ellen H. Davenport of Franklin Co., Va.; 2nd 1832, Frances Cordelia Diggs, dau. of Edward and Ann (Eustace) Diggs; 3rd 1862, Catherine R. Diggs. His reputation for veracity was such that the Judge did not require him to take the oath in court. Issue by 1st marriage.
- 6-1 Joseph, b. 1819, m. 1842, Lucy Blackwell Smith, b. 1822, d. Their issue were:
- 7-1 to 4 Wm. John and Jos. Lucy—all d. young.
- 7-5 Edwin S., b. 1849, d. circ. 1914; m. Anna Leavell of Culpepper, circ. 1878. He graduated from the University of Virginia and was professor at Bethel Military Academy near Warrenton for a number of years and at Randolph Macon Academy at Front Royal, Va. also. Issue.
- 8-1 Agnes, b. October 1879. Artist and interior decorator of note.
- 8-2 Louise, b. July 1881, m. 1910 Hugh McClung. Had issue.
- 9-1 Hugh Blackwell, b. 1911.
- 9-2 Lucy Steptoe, b. 1919.
- 8-2 Nannie, b. October 1882. Employed in the War Dept. many years.
- 8-4 Jos. M., Lt. Commander, U.S.N., b. April 1889, d. 1923; m. Gladys Sieverling 1917 and had issue
- 9-1 Nancy May, b. 1919.
- 8-5 Edwin S., Lt., U.S.A., b. 1891, d. Sept 1916.
- 8-6 John Davenport, 1st Sergeant, U.S.A. World War, b. April 1897, m. Pauline Coleman, dau. of Victoria Stuart (Mosby) Coleman, dau. of Col. Jno. S. Mosby, C.S.A. He is a civil engineer, engaged in public works in Va. Issue.
- 9-1 Stuart Mosby, b. March 1932.
- 9-2 Pauline Eugenia, b. November 1936.
- 7-6 Agnes Conway, b. 1852, d. 1877.
- 7-7 Lucy and 7-8 James, d. young.
- 6-2 Ellen Harris, b. 1820, d. 1878, m. 1839 Richard M. Smith, b. 1819, d. 1872, son of Col. Wm. Rowly

and Lucy (Blackwell) Smith. See issue under Smith.

6-3 John Davenport Blackwell, D.D., M.E.C. South, b. 1822, d. 1887. He served as Chaplain 18th Va. Inf. C.S.A. and was a very noted minister of the Methodist Church. He m. (1st) 1853 Anna Denegre, d. 1866; (2nd) 1869 Frances Grayson Smith, dau. of Henry and Frances (Foote) Smith. Issue by first marriage.

7-1 Doctor Robert Emory Blackwell, b. 1854, m. Eppie Duncan, dau. of Bishop Duncan. He entered Randolph Macon College in 1869 when he was 15 years old; taught there the last year of his four year course and until his death in 1940, 66 years. He became President of the College in 1895 and continued so until his death. He was a pillar of the Methodist Church and a distinguished educator. Issue.

8-1 Eppie, b. , m. Dr. Fred Messick of Maryland, Professor of Mathematics Emory University, Atlanta, Georgia.

7-2 Ellen Denegra, b. 1856, d. inf.

7-3 Gertrude, b. 1858, m. Prof. Lewis Melton, Principal of Randolph Macon Academy, Front Royal, Va. No issue, d. 1943. She was very public spirited.

7-4 John Francis, b. 1861, d. 1944 in Martha Williams and had issue.

7-5 Anna Davenport, b. 1863, m. Mr. Mosby. Had issue, d.

7-6 Jas. Denegre, b. 1866, d. 1871. Issue by second marriage.

7-7 Henry Davenport, b. 1871. Was Professor of English, R. M. Womans College, Lynchburg, Va.; grad. University of Va. and in Germany. He m. Virginia Strother. No issue.

7-8 Irving Hall, b. 1872. Professor, R. M. Academy at Bedford City, Va. and Principal of St. Christopher School in Richmond, Va., m. Olivia Hardy, February 17, 1938. No issue. d. 1940.

7-9 Davenport Lee, b. 1873; d. yng.

7-10 Eleanor Foote, b. 1875, d. 1895.



7-11 Edith Sumpter, b. 1896; a prominent teacher.

7-12 Dr. Karl Sigisimund Blackwell, b. 1879, d. 1941, m. 1914 Mary Ball, b. 1881. He graduated from Randolph Macon College as M.A. and from the Medical College of Va.; studied in Vienna, Austria and practiced medicine in Richmond, Va., specializing in diseases of the ear, nose and throat. He was a Fellow of the American College of Surgeons; President of the Richmond Academy of Medicine and of the State Otological and Rhinological Society, Professor of the Nose and Throat Department of the Medical College of Virginia, and President of the Y.M.C.A. He was a member of the Cincinnati Society in the State of Va. through Major Joseph Blackwell, an original member.

His wife, Mary Ball (of the family of Mary Ball, Washington's mother) descended from 1, Col. Wm. Ball, 2, Capt. Wm. Ball and wife, Miss Williamson; 3, Capt. Joseph Ball and Mary Spencer, dau. of Col. Nickolas Spencer; 4, Col. Spencer Ball and wife, Miss Moltrom; 5, Capt. Spencer Moltrom Ball and wife, Elizabeth Waring; 6, Dr. Moltrom Ball and wife, Martha Corbin Turbeville; 7, Col. Spenser Moltrom Ball and wife, Mary Dulany; 8, James M. Ball and wife, Ellen Lee Powell, were her parents. The issue of Karl and Mary Blackwell are:

8-1 Lieut. James Dulany Blackwell, b. Apr. 24, 1915, m. Emma Duval Blanton. He succeeded his father in the Cincinnati Society and served in the Aleutian Islands in World War II. Had issue.

8-2 John Davenport Blackwell, b. Nov. 30, 1918, was rejected for service in the U.S. Army for World War II on account of over height (6 feet, 7 inches).

8-3 Ellen Lee Blackwell, b. Nov. 17, 1920, graduated from Vassar College.

6-4 Benjamine Blackwell, b. 1825, d. unm.

6-5 Ann Eustace Blackwell, b. 1826, d. unm.

6-6 Rebecca Blackwell, b. 1828, d. 1832.

- 6-7 George William Blackwell, b. 1831.
- 5-4 Agatha Blackwell, b. 1792, m. Major Enoch Jeffries of Fauquier Co. (see Jeffries lineage)
- 5-5 Lucy Steptoe Blackwell, b. 1793, d. 1879, m. 1809, Col. Wm. Rowley Smith (see Smith lineage).
- 5-6 William Sparke Blackwell, b. 1800, m. 1819, Anne Sparke Gordon, dau. of Churchill and Anne (Sparke) Gordon of Culpeper, Va. Issue.
- 6-1 Ann Eliza, b. 1822, d. 1854, m. 1837, John Marshall, son of Thomas and Margaret (Lewis) Marshall.
- 6-2 Joseph Eustace, b. 1824, m. Amanda Hudson.
- 6-3 James Gordon, b. 1826.
- 6-4 Harriet Eustace, b. 1828, m. Dr. Douglas Moxley.
- 6-5 Lucy Harrison Gordon, b. 1830, m. Dr. John Daniel Payne.
- 6-6 William Sparke, C.S.A., b. 1832; served in the Prince William Co. Cavalry 4th Va. Reg. m. 1855, Julia Travers Nutt, b. 1836, dau. of Moncure Conway and Ann Eustace (Smith) Nutt.
- 6-7 Sarah Agnes Blackwell, b. 1834, m. 1854 Isham Keith C.S.A., son of Isham and Juliet (Chilton) Keith. (See Keith lineage). They and my father, Moore Carter Blackwell, were married by their cousin, Rev. John Davenport Blackwell, D.D. of the Methodist Church, the same day.
- 5-7 James Blackwell of "The Meadows" near Warrenton, Va. He was born July 4, 1805 and died 1864. There is a gray stone pitcher, owned by his granddaughter, Elizabeth Moore Blackwell, which was presented to him at a July 4th celebration at Warrenton, 1831 with his name and the date of its presentation on it. She gave it to his great-great-grandson, James H. Blackwell of Charlottesville, Va.

He m. 1831, Elizabeth Carter, b. 1807, d. 1877, dau. of Moore Fauntleroy Carter and Judith Lee (Edmonds) Carter, son of Landon and Judith (Fauntleroy) Carter of Prince William Co., son of Landon and Elizabeth (Wormly) Carter of Sabine Hall, son

of Robert ("King Carter") and Elizabeth (Landon) Carter, son of John and Sarah (Ludlow) Carter of Carotoman on the lower Rappahannock River, the first Carter to settle in Va.

The issue of James Blackwell and Elizabeth Carter were as follows:

6-1 Joseph Hancock; 6-2 Moore Carter; 6-3 Elizabeth Carter; 6-4 Agnes Eustace; 6-5 Lucy Steptoe; 6-6 Mary James. All of whom later.

6-1 Joseph Hancock Blackwell, b. 1832, d. 1905, m. 1st, Ann Roberta Edmonds, dau. of Dr. John Robert Edmonds and Helen Carter. He m. 2nd, Mollie Saunders, no issue.

He acted as Col. John S. Mosby's Chief of Staff; kept his records and gathered information for him and was known as "The Chief." He was given a part of "The Meadows" but moved to Charlottesville; issue by first marriage.

7-1 Helen Madge of whom later.

7-2 Edward Claxton, b. 1863, d. unm.

7-3 Josephine Moore of whom later.

7-4 Ernest Evor, b. 1868, killed in railroad accident.

7-5 William Carter, b. 1870, d. inf.

7-6 Pauline Carter, of whom later.

7-1 Helen Madge Blackwell, b. 1858, m. 1880 Charles Smoot Perry; issue.

8-1 John Vivian, b. 1881, m. 1918 McRae Estelle Graves; issue.

9-1 Frances, b. 1921; 9-2 John Vivian, b. 1924.

8-2 Maud Roberta, b. 1883, unm.

8-3 Mary Anna, b. 1885, m. 1905 Robt. C. Trevillian, issue.

9-1 Marion Perry, b. 1905.

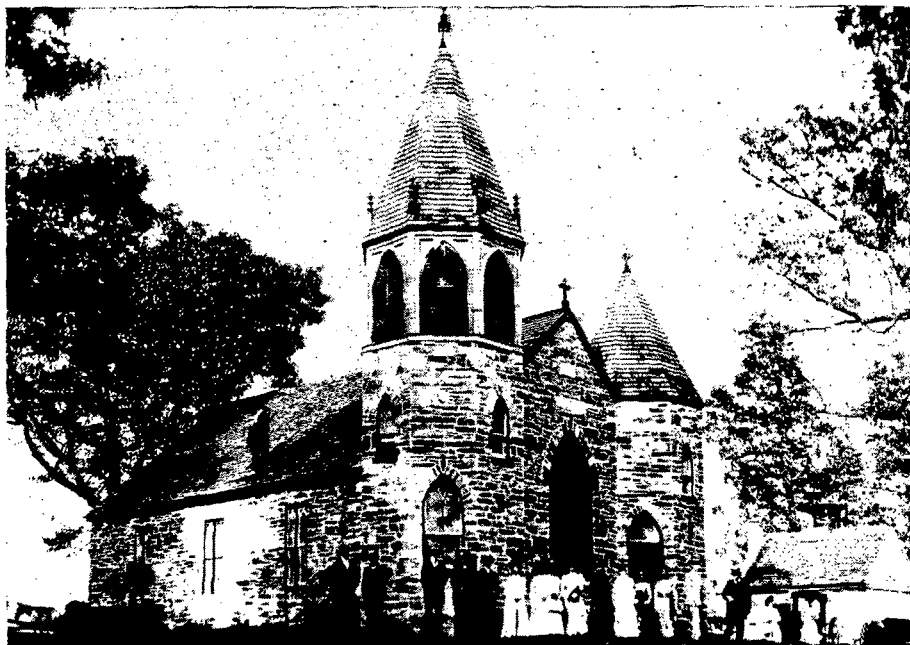
9-2 Madge Helen, b. 1908, m. 1935 Marcellus Key Duerson, Jr.; issue.

10-1 Roberta Elizabeth Campbell Duerson, b. 1939.

9-3 Robt. Carr, Jr., b. 1910, m. 1934 Mattie Graham Quarles; issue; 10-1 Robt. Carr III, b. 1936;

10-2 Jane Graham, b. 1942.

- 9-4 William Blackwell, b. 1912, m. 1932 Julia Frances Faris; issue.  
10-1 William Blackwell, Jr., b. 1937.  
10-2 Julia Frances, b. 1941.  
9-5 John Edmonds, b. 1913, m. 1943 Beryl Obenchain of Roanoke.  
9-6 Wallace Dabney, b. 1918.  
8-4 Edna Lucille, b. 1887, unmm.  
8-5 Edith Virginia, b. 1889, unmm.  
8-6 Charles Smoot, b. 1891.  
8-7 Ernest Blackwell, b. 1893, m. 1934 Dorothy Mozelle Smith.  
7-3 Josephine Moore Blackwell, b. 1865, m. 1886 William Garth, son of William and Mary (Edmonds) Garth; issue.  
8-1 Ann Roberta, b. 1887, m. John Porter Jones.  
8-2 Mary Elizabeth, b. 1889, m. William H. Peyton.  
8-3 Willie Moore (girl), b. 1890, m. Chas. Vest Wingfield.  
8-4 Lewis Winston, b. 1891, m. Martha Wingfield.  
8-5 James Woods, b. 1898, m. Florence Brown.  
8-6 Hugh Nelson, b. 1901, m. Theresa Michie.  
8-7 Daisy Stockton, b. 1904, m. Elliott Fishburn.  
7-6 Pauline Carter Blackwell, b. 1877, d. 1933, m. Wilmer Carter Blackwell, son of James E. Blackwell, son of M. C. Blackwell; issue. See under M. C. Blackwell.  
6-2 Moore Carter Blackwell, b. 1833, d. 1917, of whom later.  
6-3 Elizabeth Carter, b. 1837, m. 1858 Maj. Albert Gallatin Smith, C.S.A. See Smith 6-16.  
6-4 Agnes Eustace, b. 1840, m. (1st) 1866 Isaac Eustace Smith (6-18) and had issue; son, d. inf. (2nd) Washington Tazewell Capps of "Oakland," Lambert Point near Norfolk, Va.  
6-5 Lucy Steptoe, b. 1845, d. 1924, m. 1879 Alexander Fontaine Rose, C.S.A., b. 1846, d. 1924. Col. Rose was a wonderful narrator of Civil War Events. He used to attend all the Confederate reunions and



Bethel Church, Fauquier Co. Va., built 1836. Site donated by James Blackwell. Remodelled 1896. James E. Blackwell, architect. The cabin at the right was the beginning of Bethel Military Academy. Major Albert G. Smith, founder and principal.





Moore Carter Blackwell, father, 1890.



Sarah Alexander Blackwell, mother, 1890.





amuse the Comrades with stories, anecdotes, songs and dances. Lucy inherited "The Meadows" from her mother. Their issue were:

7-1 James Fontaine Rose, b. 1881, m. 1915 Constance Georgiana Seymour Shreve Hague, b. 1892 of Ontario, Canada. He was a civil engineer and did a great deal of work on the Canadian Pacific and other railroads in Canada. Their issue were,

8-1 Maury Fontaine Rose, b. 1921, m. 1944 Barbara Shreve Field, b. 1923.

8-2 Donald Seymour Rose, b. 1923.

7-2 Dabney Carter Rose, b. 1883. He enlisted in the Army, became a Captain, trained men for World War I, but was not allowed to go across, resigned in disgust after the War and went to Florida to live.

7-3 Col. John Boursiquot Rose, b. 1885. He graduated at West Point in the Engineer Corps, served in World Wars I and II; rose to the rank of Brigadier General, was decorated for his services and retired in 1945. He m. 1917, Mary Lapsley Keith, dau. of Julian Chilton Keith and Mary Lapsley. Their issue were:

8-1 Major John Boursiquot Rose, Jr. Air Corps), b. 1918; m. Jane Bruce Salley of South Carolina.

8-2 Julian Keith Rose, b. 1920, m. 1942 Altamae Chandler, b. 1921. Issue.

9-1 Julian Keith Rose, b. 1943.

6-6 Mary James, b. 1847, d. 1860.

6-2 Moore Carter Blackwell, C.S.A. of Fauquier Co., Va., b. 1833, d. 1917; m. 1854 Sarah Alexander Foote, b. 1831, d. 1922, dau. of Richard and Frances (Grayson) Foote of "Edmonium" near Warrenton, Va. He was Captain in the Subsistence Dept. of Stuart's Cavalry later in Col. Edward Edmonds regiment, and served with the Army of Northern Va. from Bull Run to Appomattox. He inherited "Meadow View," a stone house and 94 acres of land, adjoining "The Meadows" from his father. Before the Civil War he lived at "Farms View" near Delaplane,

Va. then called Piedmont. After the War, he moved to the "Brick House" on part of Capt. Elias Edmonds "Ivy Hill" estate near Warrenton. From there he moved to "Edmonium," the estate left by Richard Foote, the father of his wife, Sarah A. Foote. While there they repaired a stone house about 200 yards to the west, which was used before the War as the slaves quarters and moved into it in 1870. They named it "Sunny Side" and it, with 170 acres of land, was inherited by his wife from her father, Richard Foote. They lived there until 1917, when they moved to Warrenton where he died shortly after. My mother survived him five years. She had been bed-ridden for about eight years and their oldest daughter Elizabeth (Sister Bessie) had cared for her parents all that time and sacrificed herself to them. There were four children when the Civil War ended and there were five more later making nine in all, and it was quite a problem to feed, clothe and educate all of us on the farm. Fortunately, we raised about all we needed to eat on the farm except sugar, coffee and molasses. Father would turn his hand to most anything to make a little cash. The chief source of cash was in hauling fire wood to Warrenton, and during the fall, winter and spring father would send two loads every day, when possible, at about \$3.00 a load, which did not pay much after deducting hire for the cutting and hauling and other expenses. When Maj. Albert Smith started to building to enlarge Bethel Academy, father did a great deal of hauling of lumber, stone and other materials. He had a mechanical turn and did a good deal of hatchet and saw work such as making plank fences and constructing farm buildings, etc. I suppose I got my liking for carpentering, cabinet work and woodcarving from him.

The issue of M. C. and S. A. Blackwell were:

- 7-1 James Eustace, b. 1855, d. 1939.
- 7-2 Elizabeth Moore, b. 1857, d. 1934.
- 7-3 Frances Grayson, b. 1858, d. 1936.



Elizabeth Moore Blackwell (Sister Bessie).



James Eustace Blackwell (Brother Jim).





Edward Maurice Blackwell, Ass't. Surgeon, U. S. Navy, 1898—  
Spanish American War.



Lucian A. Blackwell, April 1888.



- 7-4 Mary James, b. 1861, d. 1948.
- 7-5 Edward Maurice, b. 1865.
- 7-6 Lucian Alexander, b. 1867, d. 1916.
- 7-7 Richardetta Henry, b. 1868, d. 1943.
- 7-8 Eva Ashton, b. 1872.
- 7-9 Mildred Chancellor, b. 1874, d. 1944—All of whom later. Two boys died infants.
- 7-1 James Eustace ("Brother Jim") b. 1855, d. 1939, m. 1880 Lula V. McLean, dau. of Major Wilmer McLean. Gen. Beauregard's Headquarters were in Major McLean's house at the first battle of Manassas near Bull Run, and Gen. Lee's surrender to Gen. Grant took place in his house at Appomattox Court House. After his graduation at Bethel Military Academy in 1875, where he took the scholarship medal, he helped to survey a route for a projected canal from the James River to the Ohio River. After this, with the help of Col. John S. Mosby, he got a position in the Office of the Supervising Architect, Treasury Dept., Washington, D. C. and remained there until about 1890 when he went into business in Rochester, New York. About 1892 he went to Tacoma, Washington and finally settled in Seattle, Washington as an architect and civil engineer and remained there until his death in 1939. In 1898 he started in the gold rush for Alaska, but was shipwrecked off Cape Flattery and barely escaped with his life. He with two partners started for the Klondyke in an unseaworthy sailing ship. About 90 miles off Cape Flattery, B. C. the vessel sprang a leak and sank. There were 90 persons aboard and 60 of them were lost. One steam launch had been wrecked in trying to launch it. Jim went down into the cabin to get his partners but they were so seasick they would not come on deck. When he got on deck the remaining launch had shoved off and was about 60 feet away. He was weak from seasickness and had on gum boots and a heavy sweater, but he jumped overboard and struck out for the launch. He got close to the stern of the launch, but lost consciousness and

sank; but he remembered just as he lost consciousness that his hand struck something, which was a line trailing astern. They hauled him aboard and had a hard time prying his hand loose from the line he had accidentally struck. After this, he resumed business in Seattle. He built the first dry dock for the U. S. Navy at Bremerton, Washington, and was architect for a great number of buildings in and around Seattle and was the Supervising Architect for the City for four years. During the World War he was employed by the U. S. Govt. for planning and building houses for the workmen on the Govt. works. He was a member of "The American Institute of Architects." He was very generous and helped a great deal in supporting the family, and he helped me to get a start. Consequently, he did not lay by much for his later years. I am glad I was able later to be of some assistance to him and to repay in part his assistance to me and the family. He m. (2nd) 1895, Eleanor S. Riggs of Washington, D. C. Issue by first marriage.

8-1 Wilmer Carter, b. 1881, d. 1935. He m. 1905, Pauline Carter Blackwell, dau. of Joseph Hancock and Roberta (Edmonds) Blackwell. Issue.

9-1 Elizabeth and others, d. yng.

9-2 Wilmer Alexander Blackwell, b. 1910, m. 1943 Mary Hughes Vaughan, dau. of Robt. Clarence and Lucy Clayton (Hughes) Vaughan. She was Chief nurse at Buxton Hospital, Newport News, Va. He was head of the Shipwright Division, Newport News Ship Building Co., World War II. Heresigned and went into business. Issue, 10-1 Mary Clayton.

9-3 James Hancock Blackwell, b. 1912, m. 1941 Bruce Mansfield (Boxley Clark), dau. of Philip S. and Florence D. (Mullen) Boxley of Mansfield, Louisa Co. and Orange Co. Her ancestry is as follows:

2. Sir Robt. Mansfield, son of 1, Sir Edward Mansfield and Lady Jane Somerset, dau. of Robt. Henry, Earl of Worcester, and is the founder of the Mansfield



family in Va. Sir Robert married Mistress Anne Roper, maid of honor to the Queen in 1617. His nephew, John Mansfield, was Governor of the Virginia Colony in 1614. His son, 3, David Mansfield, represented the plantation over against Jamestown in the Va. House of Burgesses. His son, 4, Wm. Mansfield, married Mary Allen. Their son 5, John m. 1737 Catherine George of Caroline Co. They moved to "Mansfield" his ancestral home in Louisa Co. which is still owned by one of his descendants. Their son, 6, Wm. Day, m. Anne Taylor. Their daughter, 7, Fenton Bruce m. James Garland Boxley. Their son, 8, Philip Selden Boxley m. Florence Duval Mullan of Lynchburg. Their dau. 9, Bruce Mansfield Boxley m. James Hancock Blackwell, 1940. He was with the Martin Airplane Co. of Baltimore, Md. during World War II but resigned and went into business in Albemarle Co. In 1945 he went into the U.S. Maritime Service but left it after the War and went into business. Issue.

10-1 James Hancock b. Apr. 24, 1942.

10-2 Bruce Mansfield, Nov. 1, 1944.

8-2 Frances Grayson Blackwell, b. 1882, m. 1910 Francis B. Talbott of Maryland, son of Joseph Francis Talbott, State Senator of Md. 1892 and Etta Priscilla Cave. She was very energetic and resourceful until she was paralyzed in 1942. Their issue were:

9-1 Francis R. Talbott, b. 1911, m. 1944 Lillie (James) Graves and farmed in southeast Maryland. Issue.

10-1 Francis Boswell b. 1946. 10-2 Lillie Howard.

9-2 James Blackwell Talbott, b. 1912. m. Lillian Brown 1942. Had no issue but adopted a dau.

9-3 Elizabeth Grayson Talbott, b. 1914, d. 1917.

9-4 Priscilla McLean Talbott, b. 1916, m. 1937 Stephen Tackney, Capt., U.S.N., b. 1916, son of John and Catherine Tackney of Ireland. He was awarded the Navy Cross for gallantry World War II. Issue.

10-1 Peter McCabe Tackney, b. Nav. Hosp. Mare Id. Cal. 1938.

10-2 Margaret Grayson Tackney, b. San Diego, Cal. 1939.

10-3 Michael O'Reilly Tackney, b. San Diego, Cal. 1942.

10-4 David Talbott Tackney, b. 1943, Nav. Hosp., Annapolis, Md.

10-5 Catherine Blackwell Tackney, b. 1947.

9-5 David Russell Talbott, Lieut., U.S.A. He volunteered for World War II and served in the Air Force. He was shot down over Germany; but escaped into Holland and back to the U.S. forces. He was decorated for bravery. He m. Barbara Lewis 1944.

9-6 Joseph Wilmer Talbott, Lieut. U.S.N., enlisted in the Navy; qualified for the Naval Academy, graduated and was in the submarine service in the Pacific during World War II. During his service his submarine sunk over thirty (30) Japanese war ships and merchantmen. He was decorated for his services. He m. 1946 Irene Hill.

9-7 Mildred Grayson Talbott, b. 1923, graduated as a trained nurse from Garfield Hospital, Washington, D. C. 1944.

8-3 Lenore Riggs Blackwell by his second marriage. She remained in Seattle with her parents until they passed away and has since been bravely carrying on alone.

7-2 Elizabeth Moore Blackwell (Sister Bessie) b. 1857, d. 1934: She taught and nursed in different families. She was Matron at a school in Salem, Southwest, Va. and then Matron at Randolph Macon Academy, Front Royal, Va. for a number of years until she had to give it up to care for her aging parents to whom she gave devoted care and attention, and sacrificed herself to them until their death. After their deaths, she spent her time with my Sisters, Mildred and Richie, her niece Grayson Talbott and me. She was a most lovable character; a favorite with all who knew her and was idolized by the family.

7-3 Frances Grayson Blackwell (Sister Fannie), b.



Mrs. M. C. Blackwell and daughters. (Standing) Bessie, Fannie and Richie. (Sitting) Mollie and mother.  
(On the ground) Eva and Mildred.





(Top) Sunny Side, home of Moore Carter Blackwell, Fauquier County, Va. (Bottom) Moore Carter and Sarah A. Blackwell at Sunny Side. (At right) Grace Blackwell Talbott and children. (At left) Elizabeth M. Blackwell, Sister Bessie.



1858, d. 1936; in 1882 m. Elias Edmonds Blackwell, son of James De Ruyter and Judith Emma (Edmonds) Blackwell. She was a great favorite and very generous hearted. Issue.

8-1 Estelle Foote, b. 1881; m. circ. 1904 Perry Brooks Johnson and their issue were:

9-1 Perry Brooks, b. 1905; m. 1930 Esther Young and their issue were:

10-1 Perry Brooks, b. 1931.

9-2 Virginia Blackwell, b. 1909; m. 1929 Dan Jackson Moffett and had issue:

10-1 Elizabeth Stewart, b. 1933.

9-3 Frances Edmonds, b. 1911. Taught public school.

9-4 Estelle, b. 1913; m. George McNair II, 1940; Issue 10-1 Georgiana, b. 1941.

10-2 George III, b. 1942.

9-5 Elise Lavinia, b. 1916, m. 1944 Alfred Wallace.

9-6 Mildred Kathryn, m. 1918; m. 1944 Wm. Harrison Armstrong. Issue: Wm. Harrison Jr., b. 1945.

9-7 Winnie Lou, b. 1925.

8-2 Elizabeth Carter, b. 1885; unkm. She was employed in the Peoples National Bank, Warrenton, Va. and remained at her home "Half Way" and cared for and supported her parents until their death and inherited the home and 40 acres of land, and inherited part of "Ivy Hill," Elias Edmonds' estate and bought the rest from her Sister.

7-4 Mary James, b. 1861 (Sister Mollie), a most lovable character and a favorite with all who knew her. She was considered the prettiest girl of the neighborhood and was very popular in the younger set. She married Dr. Thomas W. Smith 1885, son of Anderson D. and Susan (Norman) Smith; and their issue were 8-1 Norma and 8-2 Anderson who d. young. 8-1 Emily Norman, b. 1887; m. 1908 Dr. George Hiter Davis, who took up her father's practice after he died. She was a very beautiful girl and a very accomplished musician. Their issue were:

9-1 Thomas W. Smith Davis, b. 1910, m. 1937 Lucy Alexander Kirkland of S. C. He served as a secretary of the National Democratic Committee 1932-40 under Chairman J. A. Farley. He volunteered for World War II and was appointed an Ensign, as he had been to the Naval Academy; but he had to resign on account of his health. He is now in Government Service.

9-2 Drisilla Norman Davis, b. 1912, m. 1937 James Austin, Clerk in Fauquier National Bank, Warrenton, Va. Served in World War II as Lieut. U.S.N. Issue:

10-1 Joseph B., b. 1941.

10-2 Drusilla Norman, b. 1943.

9-3 George Hiter Davis, b. 1914, graduated in law at the University of Virginia; practiced law in Washington, Va. and became Commonwealth's Attorney; volunteered for World War II and was appointed an Ensign in the Navy. Commanded the gun crew on a cargo ship, promoted to Lieut. and served in the Judge Advocate General's Office. He m. 1937 Dorothy Cox of Rappahannock County. Issue:

10-1 Mary Norman, b. 1938, Nov. 5.

10-2 George H., b. 1940, April 23.

10-3 Dorothy Taylor, b. 1946.

9-4 James Blackwell, b. 1915; m. 1940 Elizabeth Browse of Charles Town, W. Va., b. 1914, dau. of Robt. T. Browse and Mary A. McDonald. He graduated at the Virginia Polytechnic Institute where he was football coach and taught at Fishburn Academy, Staunton, Va. where he was Commandant of the Cadets. He volunteered for World War II; was appointed Lieutenant and rose to Capt., U.S.A. Issue:

10-1 Elizabeth McDonald, b. June 26, 1942. 10-2

Jas. Blackwell, b. Jan. 2, 1946.

9-5 John Wilson, b. 1917. Attended Randolph Macon Academy and Randolph Macon College; clerked in a bank in Alexandria and enlisted in the Army for



World War II and rose to Lieutenant. He m. Ann Brown. Issue:

10-1 John Wilson, Jr., b. 1946.

7-5 Edward Maurice Blackwell (Bid) b. Sept. 18, 1865; graduated at Bethel Military Academy; taught private and public schools four years; graduated medical school, University of Maryland, 1890, practiced medicine at Riverton, Va. Volunteered for Spanish American War 1898, appointed Asst. Surgeon, U. S. Navy; m. 1897 Mary Saunders Bowen, b. 1872; d. 1942, dau. of Andrew Jackson and Kane (Kerfoot) Bowen; served in World War I, as Comdr. of the Hospital Ship Solace; retired 1923. (See Memoirs)

7-6 Lucian Alexander Blackwell, b. 1867; m. circ. 1912 Mae Webster. He went West; went to the Klondyke, Alaska; returned from there and worked for his brother James on the Navy Dry Dock at Bremerton, Wash.; then drifted to the gold fields at Tonapah, Nevada where he had a severe accident, practically losing his right hand and died there in 1916. As a young man, he was full of life and very popular.

7-7 Richardetta Henry Blackwell (Richie) b. 1868, d. 1943. She was named for her grandfather, Richard Henry Foote. She was very ambitious; but the facilities for educating the girls of the family were rather scant. Brother Jim sent her to school in Alexandria one year while he was there. She later taught some classes at Bethel Military Academy, where she met and married Willis Canty of South Carolina, the Commandant of the Cadets in 1899. He had been Commandant at the Citadel, the military school of South Carolina. They went to South Carolina where he engaged in planting and he had charge of the State Farms for a number of years. They then moved to Camden, which was quite a winter resort for people from the North, and there was a big race course there of which he was made Manager. He was one of the kindest men I ever knew, and you could not help liking him.

7-8 Eva Ashton Blackwell, b. 1872, m. 1910, Warren Goodman, formerly of Roanoke, Va.; but at the time was engaged in mining in Montana. They settled in Bozeman, Mont. where he practiced law until his death in 1925. Eva went to Spokane, Wash. after his death and bravely carried on alone there until she came to live with me in 1942 after the death of my wife. She is a most capable person and always ready and willing to lend a helping hand and a great asset to her community and a great help and comfort to me.

7-9 Mildred Chancellor Blackwell (Minnie), b. 1874; d. 1944; m. 1897 Wilbur Stanley Hinman I, son of Col. Wilbur F. and Sarah (Everett) Hinman of Ohio. She was a very devoted wife and mother and liked by all who knew her. Issue.

8-1 Mildred Mary, b. Washington, D. C. 1899; a very accomplished musician having studied in Germany, Vienna, Austria and Florence, Italy. She taught music in Amherst College, Va. and in an Indian School in Albuquerque, New Mexico and was in the music section of the Library of Congress for quite a while. For several years she was in the Correspondence Section of the White House Offices, Washington, D. C. but returned to the Library of Congress.

8-2 Wilbur Stanley II, b. Washington, D. C. 1906; grad. Virginia Military Institute in Electrical Engineering. He was employed by the General Electric Co. for quite awhile and since then has been in the Bureau of Standards, Washington, D. C. as a Radio expert. He got out a patent on a radio appliance which he sold to the Govt. The Division, in which he was, was reorganized and abridged and of the 30 in it, only 5 were retained and he was one of them. He helped in developing radar. He married Evelyn Bradley of Springfield, Mass. in 1930. Issue.

9-1 Wilbur Stanley III, b. 1931.

9-2 Elizabeth, b. 1936.

8-3 Maurice Blackwell, b. 1908; m. Feb. 22, 1941

Edith Miller of Mass. He graduated at the Naval Academy in 1928 but was retired for defective vision when he came up for promotion in 1931. He took a course in electrical engineering at the Renissalaer Institute, Troy, N. Y. and was employed by the Westinghouse Electrical Co. until he was recalled to active service for World War II after Pearl Harbor. He has since been promoted to Commander. He was on duty at Harvard, then instructing at the Naval Academy, at Harvard again, retired again and went to the Westinghouse Elec. Co. Issue.

9-1 Nancy Blackwell, b. Nov. 27, 1941.

9-2 David Miller, b. Nov. 25, 1943.

8-4 Sarah Elizabeth, b. 1911; m. 1936 Burke Adams of Montclair, New Jersey, a director in an airplane factory. She was a very vivacious, popular and lovely girl. Issue.

9-1 Elizabeth, b. 1938.

9-2 Michael, b. 1940.

The following is taken from the roster of the Society of the Sons of the Revolution in the District of Columbia, 1930:

Edward Maurice Blackwel, admitted, January 8, 1914. Commander (Medical Corps) U. S. Navy. Great-grandson of Joseph Blackwell (1754—1805) Signer of the "Westmoreland Protest," Second Lieutenant, 3rd. Va. (Continental) Regiment, First Lieut., 3rd. Virginia; Capt. 1781, Major Subsistence, Dept. Va. Line.

Great-great-grandson of Elias Edmonds of Virginia; assisted in raising a company at Dumfries, Va.; was Lieut., Capt., Major and Lieut. Colonel in the Virginia State Regiment (1777—1781).

Great-great-grandson of William Edmonds (1734, 1816) of Virginia; Colonel First Bat., Va. Militia 1778.

Great-great-grandson of Spence Grayson (1733—1798) of Va. Chaplain Col. Wm. Grayson's additional Cont. Regt. May 1777, retired April 1779.

Great-grandson of William Alexander (1744—1814) of Va. Lieut. Col. Va. Militia.

Great-great-grandson of William Lee Eustace (1729—1800) of Va. Captain, Second Va. Regt.; received from Congress a grant of 1000 acres land for his services.

Great-great-grandson of Joseph Blackwell (1715—1787) of Va. who at the age of sixty-one was commissioned Second Lieutenant in the Va. Line 1776; resigned 1778.

The following Blackwells from Virginia served as soldiers in the Revolution:

1. Ensign Blackwell, 1st Continental Line.
2. David, Fauquier Co.
3. David, Roane Co., Tenn.
4. David, Hanover Co., Va.
5. James, 1st Lieut. Fauquier Co., Mil.
6. James, Infantry.
7. John, Capt., 3 C.L. (5166 A).
8. John, Lt. Col. Fauq. Mil.
- 9 John, 2nd Lieut., Capt. Parrish Comp., Goochland.
10. John, Shelby Co., Ky.
11. John E., 1st Lieut. 3 C.L., wounded Brandywine, Capt. 1777; Pris. Charleston, S. C.; Prov. Maj. 1783; d. 1808.
12. John, Jr.; receipt for Arms, Culpepper Co.
13. Joseph, 2nd Lt. 10 C.L., Pris. Charleston, S. C. 1780, Capt. 1779, d. 1823 (5166 A).
14. Joseph, Sr., 2nd Lt. C.L. 1776, Ret. 1778, Capt. C. L., Maj. Va Mil
- 15 Joseph, Jr.
16. Moses, Clay Co., Ala.
17. Q———— Capt. Fauquier Mil.
18. Robert, Infantry.
19. Samuel, Capt. Va. Regt. 78—81.
20. Samuel, Capt. State Artillery, d. 1781 (4000 A).
21. Samuel, Lancaster Co., 1st Lieut., 1780.

22. Samuel, Lt. Col. Fauquier Co. 1783, Maj. 1st Bat., Fauquier Mil. 1778.
23. Thomas, Capt. 10, C.L. Mch. 2, 1777, d. Fauq. Co. 1831 (5333 a).
24. Thomas, 3 Va. Brigade, 6 & 10, C.L.
25. William, 9 C.L.
26. ———Minute Man, Nov. 1775.
27. William, Capt. 11, C.L. 1776; resigned 1778 (4000 a).
28. William, Capt. Fauquier Mil. 1778.
29. William, Clay Co., Ala. 1781.
30. Joseph, Lt. 6 C.L.
31. Thomas, Capt. 6 C.L.

## 2. ALEXANDER

The Alexanders of Virginia are descended from an ancient noble family of Scotland. There were several of that name Kings of Scotland. One of the first, Alexander I (1078—1124) sometimes called "the Fierce" became King in 1107, succeeding his brother, Edgar, to the throne. Alexander II, called "the Peaceful," succeeded his father "William the Lion" in 1214 and aided the English barons in securing the Magna Carta from King John in 1215. During his reign he established trial by jury in Scotland at Stirling Castle. The earliest ancestor of the Virginia Alexanders of whom there is a record is John Alexander, "Lord of the Isles" and his successors, as follows:

1. John Alexander, Lord of the Isles; m. Margaret, dau. of Robert Bruce II, King of Scot., and had
2. Alexander, 3rd son, who had
3. Alexander, 2nd son; m. in 1480 and had
4. Thomas, who obtained "MENSTRIE" in 1505, and had
5. Andrew; m. Catherine Graham 1520, and had
6. Alexander; m. Elizabeth Douglas, and had
7. Andrew, eldest son, who succeeded to "MENSTRIE" in 1544, and had

8. Alexander of "MENSTRIE"; m. Elizabeth Forbes, and had

9. Wm. Alexander of "MENSTRIE", eldest son, who had

10. Alexander, eldest son of "MENSTRIE;" m. Marion Contee and had

11. William, only son Lord Stirling; m. Janet Erskine and had

12. John Alexander; m. Miss Graham; sold home in Scotland "Gartmore;" came to America 1659; settled Staff Co., Va., 1660; had

13. John M.; purchased Howison patent of land extending from Georgetown to Hunting Cr., Fairfax Co., Va. in 1660; had 2 sons.

14. Philip; m. Sarah Ashton, dau. Capt. Peter Ashton; issue:

1. Jane; b. 1690; m. Cadwallader Dade.

2. Elizabeth; b. 1693; m. Robt. Dade. 2 dau. French of Fairfax.

3. Sarah; b. 1700; m. Thos. Pearson, gent.

4. Frances; m. Townshend Dade.

5. Philip; m. Sarah Hooe, Nov. 11, 1726.

Cadwallader, Robert and Townshend Dade were sons of Lady Frances Townshend by her 1st husband, Townshend Dade; Philip, the father of these children, died in 1705, and his wife, Sarah Ashton, m. Burdette Clifton and had two children, viz:

1. Ann Clifton, b. 1706.

2. Burdette Clifton, b. 1708.

15. Capt. Philip Alexander (See 5 above) m. Sarah Hooe, dau. Col. Rice Hooe of Barns Field and Lady Frances Townshend, widow of Townshend Dade. Lady Townshend was dau. Col. Robt. Townshend and Mary Langhorne, dau. of Needham Langhorne. Issue of Philip Alexander and Sarah Hooe.

1. Frances, b. Oct. 5, 1728.

2. Jane, b. Jan. 12, 1730.

3. Elizabeth, b. Dec. 23, 1731.

4. Sarah, b. Sept. 30, 1733.

5. John, b. Nov. 25, 1735.

6. William, b. March 3, 1744.

7. Robt., b. Aug. 1746.

Philip Alex. d. July 19, 1753 and Sarah Hooe Aug. 14, 1758.

16. Col. William, Alexander, built Effingham House and m. Sigismunda Mary Massie, dau. of Sigismund Massie and Mary Stuart, dau. Rev. David Stuart. Rev. David Stuart's 2nd wife was Hannah Gibbons, dau. of Sir Jno. Gibbons, Gov. Barbadoes. Rev. David Stuart was son of Stuart and Lady Erskine, dau. of David Askine, Lord Dun. He came to Va. 1715 and was rector St. Paul's Parish, St. George Co. He was descended from Royal House of Stuarts. The name used to be "Stewart" but as Mary Stuart, Queen of the Scots, was reared and educated in France, she changed it to Stuart as the French alphabet has no "w" in it. Issue of William Alexander and Sigismunda Mary Massie were:

1. John Stuart, b. April 5, 1766; m. Catherine Foote.

2. Sarah, b. Nov. 22, 1767; m. William Foote, circ. 1783, d. 1804, of whom later.

3. Mary, b. Jan. 24, 1769; d. 1779.

4. Frances, b. March 11, 1770; d. 1774.

5. Jane, b. Nov. 30, 1771; m. Col. Jno. F. Slaughter.

6. Elizabeth Ashton, b. Dec. 22, 1773; m. Jared Alexander.

7. Mary Stuart, b. Feb. 8, 1775; m. Thos. Harrison.

8. Philip, b. April 5, 1778; m. Miss Harrison.

9. Frances, b. April 5, 1778; m. Langhorne Dade.

10. William, b. Sept. 17, 1779; d. 1791.

11. Robert, b. Aug. 6, 1781; m. Helen Brower.

12. Langhorne, b. April 10, 1783; d. 1793.

13. Gerad, b. June 25, 1784; m. Eleanor Lee.

14. Lawrence Gibbons, b. Oct. 6, 1785; m. Miss Harrison.

15. Wm. Sigismund, b. Nov. 16, 1787; d. 1836.  
Wm. Alexander, father of the above children d.  
Aug. 27, 1836.
17. Issue of Sarah Alexander and Wm. Foote were
  14. She died 1804, age 37. See Foote lineage.
    1. George Foote.
    2. William.
    3. Alexander.
    4. Philip.
    5. John.
    6. Jilson.
    7. Richard, b. circ. 1790; m. (1) Frances Grayson. (2) Miss Wallace.
    8. Frederick; m. 3 times.
    9. Edmund.
    10. Mary Stuart, b. Dec. 18, 1794; m. Jno. Whitney Massie.
    11. Sigismunda Alexander; m. (1) John Ashton, K. G. Co. (2) Chas. B. Stuart, Pr. W. Co.
    12. Gerad.
    13. Stephen.
    14. Anne, m. Judge Taylor, Miss.
  18. Richard H. Foote, m. circ. 1820, (1) Frances Grayson and their issue were:
    1. William Grayson.
    2. John Francis.
    3. Frances Eleanor, m. Henry Smith. See Smith lineage.
    4. Sarah Alexander, b. 1832, d. 1922, m. 1854 Moore Carter Blackwell, b. 1833. See Blackwell lineage.
    5. Richard Henry.
    6. George Grayson.
- Richard Foote, m. (2) Virginia Revolutiana Wallace and their issue were:
  1. Wallace. Went to Texas and was killed in a fight.
  2. Virginia Fitzgerald, d. unm. A very beautiful woman.



3. Elizabeth Wallace d. unm. A very beautiful woman.

4. See above

The first Alexander emigrant to Virginia was Capt. John Alexander of Stafford Co., b. in Scotland and came to Virginia in 1659 and died in 1677. He obtained a large grant of land in Northampton Co., Va. in 1659. In 1664 he patented land in Westmoreland Co. on Attopan Creek and 2,000 acres in Stafford Co. in 1668. He also purchased the Howison patent of land extending from Georgetown to Hunting Creek, Fairfax Co. and one of his descendants, Philip, gave most of the land upon which the City of Alexandria, Va. is built and in his honor the name was changed from Belle Haven to Alexandria.

John Alexander proceeded to settle upon the Howison Patent a number of families who were closely connected to him, among them being the Pearsons, Wests, Chapmans, Dades, Stuarts, Hooes and Harrisons, and many of the people of Alexandria and northern Virginia are descended from these families.

He built "Abingdon" about three miles north of Alexandria, and it descended to his son, John M. and it passed through several generations of the family into the possession of John Park Curtis. It was the home of Nellie Custis, the daughter of Martha Custis, wife of George Washington, and was preserved as a shrine. Nothing remains of it now, as the Washington Air Field occupies the site. It was located on the west side of the Washington and Mt. Vernon Boulevard about half way between Washington and Alexandria.

### 3. BALL

The first emigrant Col. William Ball IV, who came to Va. in 1657 was a descendant of:

1-1 William Ball I, Lord of the Manor Barham, who d. in 1480, and his son and heir,

2-1 Robert Ball, d. 1543, and his son and heir.

3-1 William Ball II, d. 1550 at Workham, and his son and heir,

4-1 John Ball I, d. 1599, m. (1st) Alice Hayes of Finchamster; (2nd) Agnes Holloway, dau. of Rich'd. Holloway of Barham, and his son by 2nd. marriage.

5-5 John Ball II, their 5th child, d. 1628, m. Elizabeth Webb, dau. of Thomas Webb, and their son and heir,

6-1 William Ball III, of Lincoln Inn: Attorney in the Office of Pleas in the Exchequer, was living in 1634, and his son and heir,

7-1 William IV, of England, and first of Va. of "Millenbeck," Lancaster Co., b. circ. 1615 in Eng., d. 1680 in Va. He came to Va. in 1657 and located on the Rappahannock River in St. Mary's Parish and called his estate "Millenbeck." He m. in London, Eng. July 2, 1638, Hannah Atherold, dau. of Thos. Atherold of Burgh, Stafford Co., Eng. Issue.

8-1 Richard, d. inf.

8-2 William, b. 1641 in Eng., d. 1694 in Va.; m. (1st) Mary or Margaret Williamson, dau. of Jas. Williamson of Rappahannock Co.; (2nd) Miss Harris of Bay View, North'd. Co.; and (3rd) Margaret Downman, dau. of Rawleigh Downman. Issue by third marriage.

9-1 William, m. Hannah Beale, and had issue.

9-2 Capt. Richard, m. Sarah Young, and had issue.

9-3 Major James, m. (1st) Eliza Hawson; (2nd) Mary (Conway) Dangerfield, dau. of Edwin and Sarah (Fleete) Conway; (3rd) Mary Ann (Bertrand) Ballendine, and had issue.

9-4 Capt. Joseph, m. Mary Spencer, and had issue.

9-5 Capt. George, m. (1st) Miss Haynie, and (2nd) Grace Waddy, and had issue.

9-6 Samuel, m. Ann Taylor, and had issue.

9-7 David, m. (1st) Mary ———; (2nd) Ellen Heale.

9-8 Stretchley, d. young.

- 9-9 Margaret, m. Rawleigh Downman, and had issue.
- 8-3 Col. Joseph Ball, of whom later.
- 8-4 Hannah Ball, m. Capt. David Fox, and had issue.
- 8-3 Col. Joseph Ball of "Epping Forest," Lancaster Co., Va., b. May 24, 1649 in Eng., d. June 1711 in Va. He was Lieut. Col. of Lancaster Co.; a vestryman and liberal supporter of the Established Church. He m. (1st) 1675 in Eng. Elizabeth Romney, dau. of Wm. Romney of London, Eng., d. prior to 1703. (2nd) 1707, Mary (Rogers Montague) Johnson of Lancaster and native of England. Issue by first marriage.
- 9-1 Hannah, b. 1683, m. 1707, Rawleigh Travers, Staff Co., son of Wm. Travers, and had issue.
- 9-2 Elizabeth, b. 1684, d. 1711, m. 1710, Rev. John Carnegie.
- 9-3 Esther, b. 1685, d. 1751, m. 1700, Rawleigh Chinn of Lancaster Co., and had issue.
- 9-4 Anne Ball, b. 1686, m. 1704 Col. Edwin Conway (See Conway and Blackwell lineage).
- 9-5 Joseph Ball, b. Mch. 11, 1689 of Moratico, Lancaster Co., d. Jan. 10, 1760 at Wortham, Eng, where he removed in 1740. He m. 1709, Frances Ravenscroft, dau. of Thos. Ravenscroft, and had issue.
- 9-6 Mary Ball, b. 1707, at Epping Forest, Lancaster Co., d. Aug. 25, 1789 at Mt. Vernon. m. Mch. 6, 1730, Augustine Washington of Bridges Creek, Westmoreland Co., b. 1694, d. 1743. She was the second wife of Augustine Washington, and their issue were:
- 10-1 George Washington, b. Feb. 22, 1732, at Wakefield, Westmoreland Co., d. Dec. 14, 1799 at Mt. Vernon, Fairfax Co., Va. He was the First President of the United States of America and Commander in Chief of the Army during the Revolution.
- 10-2 Elizabeth (Betty Washington), b. June 28, 1733, m. May 7, 1750 Col. Fielding Lewis of "Kenmore," Fredericksburg, Va., son of Hon. John and Frances (Fielding) Lewis of Warner Hall.

10-3 Col. Samuel Washington, b. 1734, at Wakefield, served with distinction in Rev. War. m. (1st) Jane Champ; (2nd) Mildred Thornton; (3rd) Lucy Chapman; (4th) Anne Steptoë (Allerton).

10-4 John Augustine, b. Wakefield, Jan. 13, 1736, d. 1787. He raised an independent company for the Rev. War and was made Col. in 1775 of Westmoreland Militia and served with distinction through the War. He m. Hannah Bushrod, dau. of Col. John and Jane Lane (Corbin) Bushrod, and had issue.

10-5 Col. Charles Washington of Charlestown, W. Va., b. May 2, 1738, m. Mildred Thornton, dau. of Col. Francis and Mildred (Gregory) Thornton of Fall Hill Spottsylvania Co., Va. and had issue.

10-6 Mildred, b. June 22, 1739, d. Oct. 28, 1740.

#### 4. BOWEN

JOHN BOWEN, who came to Old Rappahannock Co. in 1666, was the first Bowen to settle in Va. He came through the Capes sixty years before any other branch of the family. His descendants moved up the Rappahannock River. Other branches of the family came later from Mass. and N. J. The Bowen families were large and more than 30 served in the Revolution.

Old Rappahannock County was formed from Lancaster County in 1656 and was divided into Richmond and Essex Counties in 1692. The present County of Rappahannock was formed from Culpepper in 1833.

Many Bowens came to Virginia later from the Northern Colonies and settled in the Shenandoah Valley. There are several thousand Bowens in Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania. They have a reunion every year which is largely attended.

1-1 JOHN BOWEN of Wales and his wife Rebecca settled in old Rappahannock, Va. in 1666, d. 1686.

Their issue were 4 sons and 1 daughter as follows:

2-1 Matthew, m. Eliza Wood, May 6, 1708.

2-2 John.

2-3 Stephen, of whom later.

2-4 Alexander.

2-5 Martha.

2-3 STEPHEN BOWEN. There is no record of his birth, death or marriage, but his descendants were:

3-1 Stephen Bowen who m. Miss Filklin and had issue: 5 sons and 3 daughters as follows:

4-1 John Bowen m. Betsy Hansford and had issue: 6 sons and 2 daughters as follows:

5-1 Armistead.

5-2 Stephan.

5-3 John.

5-4 Alexander.

5-5 Frances.

5-6 Lucy, m. Squiers.

5-7 Betsy, m. unknown.

5-8 Colbert.

4-2 William, no issue.

4-3 Frances, no issue.

4-4 Margaret Bowen, m. William Davis and had issue:

5-1 Daughter m. Timberlake.

5-2 Daughter, m. Chinn.

5-3 Daughter, m. Bartlette.

5-4 Daughter, m. Gilkerson.

4-5 Sally, no issue.

4-6 Elizabeth, no issue.

4-7 THOMAS BOWEN, m. Sally Winterton, of whom later.

4-8 James Bowen, m. Rachel Bowen in Fauquier Co., Va., Dec. 17, 1781. He was a soldier in the Revolution. (Crozier's Va. County Records Vol. 4 page 13) their issue were:

5-1 Catherine.

5-2 Betsy.

5-3 Mary.

- 5-4 Margaret, m. Thomas Ball.
- 5-5 Nancy.
- 5-6 Sally.
- 5-7 Thomas Conrad Bowen, d. 1886, m. 1st Eliza Ann Wheatley of Culpepper Co., Va. 2nd Margaret Timberlake of Clarke Co., Va. Issue by 1st marriage.
- 6-1 Mary Eliza, m. Col. John James Grantham of Jefferson Co., W. Virginia and had issue:
  - 7-1 Margaret Bowen Grantham.
  - 7-2 James.
  - 7-3 Eliza Wheatley, m. Dr. Addison Timberlake.
  - 7-4 Caroline Ficklin.
  - 7-5 Julia La Rue, m. George S. Shirley. Issue by 2nd marriage.
- 6-2 Julia, m. James W. Shirley and had issue.
  - 7-1 Conrad Bowen Shirley.
  - 7-2 Armstead.
  - 7-3 Margaret Timberlake, m. McCue.
- 5-8 Wesley, no record.
- 5-9 Stephen, no record.
- 5-10 James Bowen, m. Frances Stark, d. 1880, had issue.
  - 6-1 Mary, m. Oliver R. Funston of Clarke Co., Va.
  - 6-2 Ann, m. John Baylor.
  - 6-3 Eliza, m. George M. Bowen.
- 5-11 Thornton, no record.
- 5-12 Peter, had
  - 6-1 George M.
- 5-13 William Bowen, m. Eliza George of Fauquier Co., Va. and had issue:
  - 6-1 Harry C. of Remington, Va.
- 4-7 THOMAS BOWEN, m. Sally Winterton of Fauquier Co., Va. Dec. 11, 1781. He was a Lieutenant in the Revolution (Crozier's Va. County Records Vol. 4, page 13). Their issue were:
  - 5-1 James Bowen of whom later.
  - 5-2 Thomas, settled in Kentucky.
  - 5-3 Nancy, died without issue.
- 5-1 JAMES BOWEN, b. Sept. 1, 1787, d. Feb. 12,

1837, m. 1st Mrs. Amelia Tuft Pollard Nov. 16, 1815 who d. Feb. 12, 1818; m. 2nd May 9, 1820 Harriet Martin Wheatley in Fauquier Co., Va., b. Dec. 20, 1800 and d. Front Royal, Warren Co., Va. Oct. 12, 1858. His issue by 1st marriage:

6-1 Edwin Bowen, b. Oct. 1816, m 1st Mary Bryarly March 31, 1836, 2nd Eliza Frances Johnson of Clarke Co. Issue by 1st marriage:

7-1 Susan Amelia, issue by 2nd marriage.

7-2 James Pollard.

7-3 William Brownley.

7-4 Frances.

7-5 Amelia Tutt.

7-6 Ella.

7-7 Anna.

7-8 Clara.

7-9 Lily.

7-10 Edwin.

7-11 Blanche.

7-12 & 13 two children died young. Issue of James Bowen by 2nd marriage:

6-2 Walter Bowen, Capt. C.S.A., b. July 14, 1821 at Belle Coil, Fauquier Co., Va., d. July 31, 1881, at Winchester, Va., m. 1842 Ann Maria Kerfoot at "Walnut Hill" Warren Co., Va. who was born there Feb. 10, 1823 and d. Apr. 21, 1869 at Springdale, Warren Co., Va. They are both buried at Walnut Hill. Issue were: (11)

7-1 Flora, b. Sept. 7, 1843, d. July 2, 1887.

7-2 Ann Elizabeth, b. Dec. 29, 1844, d. June 26, 1902, m. Oct. 1, 1867 William Arthur Wheatley, b. Jan. 4, 1843, d. May 11, 1901. He was a soldier C.S.A. and their issue were:

8-1 Ella M.

8-2 Pickney.

8-3 Ada, m. John Bayliss.

7-3 Harriet Webb, b. Feb. 1, 1847, d. June 28, 1906, m. Mch. 22, 1870 Alwyn Jameson. Issue:

8-1 Mary Lewis, m. Robt. Jarman.

- 8-2 Henry Morton.
- 8-3 Ernest.
- 8-4 Ralph.
- 8-5 Manson.
- 8-6 Alwyn Taylor.
- 8-7 Wardlaw.
- 7-4 James Mandly Bowen, b. July 31, 1848, d. May 1905, m. Ida Pugh. Their issue:
  - 8-1 Robt. Mitchell.
  - 8-2 James Mandly.
  - 8-3 William.
  - 8-4 Ida.
  - 8-5 Martha.
  - 7-5 Walter, b. Dec. 17, 1850, d. May 29, 1910.
  - 7-6 Garland, b. Sept. 28, 1852, d. Apr. 1895.
  - 7-7 Margaret, b. Feb. 1, 1855, m. Scott H. Hansbrough of Winchester, Va., and had issue:
    - 8-1 Lucy Ethel, m. Maurice Baptist.
    - 8-2 Garland Mortimer, m. Mildred Miller.
  - 7-8 Lucy, b. July 31, 1858, d. Oct. 20, 1891, m. James B. Hall.
  - 7-9 James.
  - 7-10 Hunter.
  - 7-11 Robt. Lee, b. 1864, d. 1888.
- 6-3 Ann Eliza, b. Oct. 10, 1824, m. Jas. Wheatley Field Dec. 22, 1852. She died and he married her sister, Harriet (6-6).
- 6-4 Mary Mildred, b. 1827, m. Jas. H. Jamieson 1846.
- 6-5 James (twin) b. 1829, m. 1853 Mary Smith Kerfoot, sister of Jane Adams Kerfoot. Had issue:
  - 6-6 Harriet (twin) b. 1829, m. Jas. Wheatley Field.
  - 6-7 Andrew Jackson, of whom later.
  - 6-8 Ella, b. 1837, m. James Wheatley and had issue:
    - 7-1 James Bowen Wheatley, m. Louise Knight.
  - 6-7 Andrew Jackson Bowen I, C.S.A., born Feb. 20, 1832, d. Aug. 8, 1898, m. 1858 Jane Adams Kerfoot, sister of Mary Smith Kerfoot. His home was "Gentley" at Rockland, Warren Co., Va. about seven (7)





(Top) "Gentley", home of Andrew Jackson Bowen, Warren County, Va. (Bottom) Group at "Gentley". (Left to right) Mary Bowen Blackwell, A. J. Bowen III, A. J. Bowen II, Lorena Conrad, Mrs. A. J. Bowen I, Mrs. A. J. Bowen II, son Maurice Bowen, Virginia Kerfoot Bowen.



miles from Front Royal and fifteen (15) miles from Winchester. He was a successful farmer and one of the founders of the Rockland Baptist Church, and a very influential citizen in the County. He was a Lieutenant in Col. John S. Mosby's Rangers in the Civil War. He was captured and imprisoned at Camp Chase until the end of the War. Their issue were nine as follows:

- 7-1 George Kerfoot, b. 1858, d. 1860. One other d. inf.
- 7-2 Nannie Martin.
- 7-3 Andrew Jackson, II.
- 7-4 James Edward.
- 7-5 Lucy Adams.
- 7-6 Mary Saunders.
- 7-7 Virginia Kerfoot.
- 7-8 Ella Elvira.
- 7-9 Howard Wheatley.
- 7-2 Nannie Martin Bowen, b. 1860, d. 1918, m. William Conrad. Their issue were:
- 8-1 Mary Hunter, m. Chas. H. Darling. Issue (9-1: Gladys).
- 8-2 Bowen, m. and had issue.
- 8-3 Virginia, m. Edgar Holland and had issue.
- 8-4 Lila, d. circ. 1941, m. Preston Hite; issue (9-1: Preston).
- 8-5 Herbert, m. Alice Kelley and had issue.
- 8-6 Nannie, m. Mr. Smithers and had issue.
- 8-7 Ralph, m. Jane E. Edholm. Issue:
- 9-1 Ralph, killed in action World War II.
- 8-8 Mildred, m. Harry Evans. No issue.
- 7-3 Andrew Jackson Bowen, II, b. 1862, d. 1936, m. circ. 1904 Elizabeth Simpson, b. 1881, d. 1937, dau. of William and Fannie Rhodes Simpson. He succeeded his father, having bought Gentley from the other heirs. He was a staunch member of the Rockland Baptist Church and beloved and respected by all who knew him. Issue:
- 8-1 Virginia Kerfoot, b. 1905, d. 1946, m. 1934 Jos.

DeJarnette Keyser of Washington, Rappahannock Co. No issue. d. 1946.

8-2 Andrew Jackson Bowen, III, b. 1908, m. 1936 Consuella Getty of West Virginia. He became Manager, Northern Va. Power Co. Issue:

9-1 Andrew Jackson, IV, b. 1938.

9-2 William G., b. 1942.

9-3 Robert B., b. 1946.

8-3 Edward Maurice Bowen, b. 1913, m. 1942 Mary Nelson Blandford. Issue.

9-1 Edward Maurice, b. 1944.

9-2 Susan Randolph, b. 1946.

He bought "Gentley" from Virginia and Andrew. The ancestry of his wife is as follows:

Thomas Nelson "Scotch Tom," with his wife, Sarah, came from Penrith Cumberlandshire, England in 1700 and was one of the founders of Yorktown, Va. His son, William, was Secretary of the Colony and built the Nelson House at Yorktown, now owned by a Mr. Blow. General Thomas Nelson, who owned the house during the Revolution and Col. Wm. Nelson were sons of the Secretary. Col. Wm. Nelson's son, Col. Wm. Nelson, married Lucy Caldwell a gr. dau. of Col. Randolph and Elizabeth Beverly a gr. dau. of Major Robt. Beverly who came to Va. in 1663. Col. Nelson and Lucy Caldwell had Dr. Wm. Armstead Nelson and he had Wm. Armstead Nelson whose daughter Blanche Nelson m. Charles Edward Blanford, an Englishman and their daughter Mary Nelson Blanford married Edward Maurice Bowen.

7-4 James Edward Bowen, b. 1864, d. 1935, m. Mammie Sowers, dau. of George and Martha Sowers. He went to Montana to raise sheep, returned to Front Royal for merchandising and finally went into business in Philadelphia, Pa. He d. circ. 1935. Issue:

8-1 James.

8-2 Virginia.

8-3 Catherine.

- 8-4 Hilton.
- 8-5 Mable.
- 8-6 Preston.
- 7-5 Lucy Adams Bowen, b. 1868, m. 1892 Emmet Conrad. She died in 1895. Issue:
- 8-1 Lorena Fay, b. 1894, d. 1935; m. 1917 Richard Gibson Wedderspoon, Professor of art, Syracuse University, N. Y. No issue.
- 8-2 Lucien Bowen, b. 1895; he served in the English Army in World War I. He went to California. m. Louise ————. No issue. He m. 2nd Anne ————.
- 7-6 Mary Saunders Bowen, b. 1870, m. Comdr. E. M. Blackwell, Apr. 17, 1897, died July 21, 1942. No issue. (See Blackwell).
- 7-7 Virginia Kerfoot Bowen, b. 1872, m. circ. 1899 Will L. Hancock, Atlanta, Ga., d. 1922. Issue.
- 8-1 Kerfoot Bowen Hancock, b. 1900, m. 1921 Margaret S. White. He d. circ. 1940. His issue were:
- 9-1 Mary White.
- 9-2 Jennie Kerfoot.
- 8-2 Will L. Hancock, Jr., b. 1903, d. 1941, m. 1935 Georgiana K. Nelson.
- 7-8 Ella Elvira Bowen, b. 1875, d. 1930, m. 1902 Virgil Maddox of Atlanta, Ga. Issue:
- 8-1 Mary Virginia, b. 1903, m. Luther Tatum an attorney from Alabama. Issue:
- 9-1 Virginia Ann.
- 9-2 Barbara.
- 9-3 Richard.
- 8-2 Eloise E., b. circ. 1908, m. circ. 1944 Henry Coleman and moved to Miami, Fla. Issue:
- 9-1
- 7-9 Howard Wheatley Bowen, b. 1881, d. 1930, m. 1917, Lucille Cooper, dau. of Dr. William Francis and Lucy (Sowers) Cooper of Newport News, Va., where Howard was in the real estate business in which he was very successful. He was associated with his cousin William Chapin for many years. His issue were:
- 8-1 Wm. Francis Cooper, b. 1913, succeeded his

father in business; m. 1925 Haddon Fitchett. Issue:

9-1 Haddon French, b.

9-2 William Cooper, b.

8-2 Jane French, b. 1916, m. 1940 John Houston.

Issue:

9-1

8-3 Mary Lucille, b. 1922, m. 1944 Doctor Hankin,  
U.S.A. Issue.

9-1

## 5. CARTER

John Carter, the emigrant, settled in Virginia about the middle of the 17th century. They are a very old and noble family, being traced back to Hugh Capet, King of France, b. 939, d. 996. The family comes down through several Kings of France and England, and from Robert "King" Carter, are descended General Robert E. Lee and his wife, four Governors of Virginia, three signers of the Declaration of Independence, and two Presidents of the United States.

I—Hugh Capet, King of France (987 to 996 A.D.), b. 939, d. 996. He succeeded his father as Count of Paris in 956 and thereby became actual ruler, but did not succeed to the title of King until 987. His son, Robert the Pius, succeeded him.

II—Robert the Pius.

III—Henry I.

IV—Phillip I.

V—Louis VI.

VI—Louis VII.

VII—Phillip II.

VIII—Louis VIII, who married Blanche of Castile, and had

IX—Prince Robert, Earl of Artois III, who had

X—Blanche, widow of King Henry of Navarre, who married secondly, Edward Plantaganet, Earl of Leicester and Lancaster, Son of Henry III, King of England.

XI—Henry Plantegenet, Earl of Leicester and Lancaster, who married Lady Maud, daughter of Sir Patrick Charworth, and had

XII—Lady Eleanor Planteganet. who married secondly Sir Robert Fitzallen, K. G., ninth Earl of Arundel and VIIth Earl of Surrey, and had

XIII—John Fitzallen, Lord Maltravers, lost at sea; his daughter

XIV—Lady John Fitzallen, married Sir William Echyningham, died 1413, and

XV—Sir Thomas Echyningham died 1441, leaving

XVI—Lady Margaret Echyningham, who married William Blount, eldest son of Sir Walter Le Blount, treasurer of Calais, created Lord Mount Joy—1461, and his wife, Lady Anne Nevill, also of R. D. from Edward II; they had

XVII—Lady Elizabeth Blount, who married Sir Andrew, Baron of Windmore, also a lineal descendant of Edward II and Elizabeth Plantaganet, and had

XIX—Thomas Ludlow of Denton, died in 1606, who married Jane, daughter of Thos. Pyle, and had

XX—Gabriel Ludlow, born 1587, married Phyllis, and had

XXI—Sarah Ludlow, who became a third wife of John Carter, who came from England to Virginia and was a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses in 1669.

XXII—Robert Carter of Carotoman was called "King Carter" because of his vast landed estate. Robert Carter married 1st Judith Armistead; second Elizabeth Landon and had

XXIII—Landon, of Sabine Hall, b. 1713, m. (1st) Elizabeth Wormley, b. 1714, d. 1749.

XXIV—Landon Pr. Wm. Co., Va. m. Judith Fauntleroy, dau. of Hon. Moore and Margaret (Micon) Fauntleroy of "Crundall" Rich'd. Co., Va. Their son

XXV—Moore Fauntleroy Carter, m. Judith Lee Edmonds, dau. Col. Wm. Edmonds, their dau.

XXVI—Elizabeth Carter, b. 1808, d. 1877, m. 1831

James Blackwell, b. 1805, d. 1864, their son  
XXVII—Moore Carter, b. 1833, d. 1917, m. Sarah  
A. Foote, b. 1831, d. 1922.

XXVIII—See descendants of Moore Carter and  
Sarah A. Blackwell.

2- Col. **John Carter** of England and Virginia was  
the son of I—Hon. Wm. Carter of "Casstown," Here-  
ford Co. and the Middle Temple England. Col. John  
Carter, b. 1620 in England, d. 1669 at "Carotoman"  
Lancaster Co., Va. He came to the Colony in 1649  
and located in lower Norfolk, which he represented  
as Burgess 1649. He later removed to Lancaster Co.  
where he built the ancestral home "Carotoman." He  
served as Burgess from Lancaster 1653-58, and was an  
influential member of the King's Council 1658-59.  
Commander against the Rappahanwack Indians 1654,  
Col. of Lancaster, 1656, liberal supporter of the Es-  
tablished Church and gave the first church which  
stood on land where Christ Church was later built,  
by his son Robert, and was Vestryman. He m. (1st)  
Jane Glyn, dau. of Morgan Glyn of England (2nd)  
Eleanor (Eltonhead) Brocas, widow of Hon. Wm.  
Brocas and dau. of Rich'd. and Ann (Sutton) Elton-  
head of England. (3rd) Anne Carter, dau. of Cleve  
Carter of England. (4th) Sarah Ludlow, dau. of  
Gabriel Ludlow of "Dunton". (5th) Elizabeth Shir-  
ley of Gloucester Co., Va. Three of his wives, Jane  
Glyn, Sarah Ludlow and Ann Carter are buried with  
him in Christ Church. His issue by first marriage  
were:

3-1 Sarah.

3-2 Charles, d. young.

3-3 Elizabeth, m. Nath Utie. Issue by second mar-  
riage:

3-4 Col. John of Lancaster Co., m. (1st) Miss  
Lloyd, dau. of Col. Wm. and Elizabeth Lloyd of  
Richmond Co. (2nd) Elizabeth Travers, dau. Raleigh  
Travers, and had issue.

Issue by fourth marriage, Sarah Ludlow:



3-5 Chas.

3-6 Sarah, d. young.

3-7 **Col. Robert Carter**, of "Carotoman" Lancaster Co., Va., b. 1663, d. Aug. 4, 1732, served as Burgess 1695-99 as Speaker of the House; as Treasurer of the Colony 1694-1732, was influential member of the King's Council 1699-1732, and its President, acting Governor 1726-27. On account of his great wealth and prominence he was called "King Carter." His estate consisted of 300,000 acres of land, 1,000 slaves and 10,100 pounds Sterling. He was a prominent and active member of the Established Church and was Vestryman of Christ Church, Lancaster Co., and built the present church. It is of brick and the walls are three feet thick, and the shape of a Greek cross and one of the prettiest Colonial churches. It stood for many years without a roof and when it was repaired in 1896 the plaster did not have to be renewed. It has been restored just as it was in Colonial times. Robert Carter, the builder, died the year it was finished. He m. (1st) Judith Armestead, of "Hesse," Gloucester Co., Va., dau. of Col. John and Judith (Bowles) Armestead, and (2nd) Elizabeth (Landon) Willis, dau. of Thomas Landon of "Grednal" Hereford Co., England. Issue by first marriage:

4-1 Elizabeth, b. 1680, d. 1721. m. (1st) Hon. Nathaniel Burwell of Fairfield and (2nd) Dr. George Nicholas of Williamsburg, a surgeon in the British Navy. Had issue by both.

4-2 John of Carotoman, Lancaster Co. and Shirley Chas. City Co., Va., b. 1690, d. 1742. He was Attorney at Law, Middle Temple, London, England. Returned to Virginia and served as Secretary of the Colony 1722, King's Council 1724. M. Elizabeth Hill, dau. and heiress Col. Edward and ——— Williams Hill of "Shirley" and had issue.

4-3 Judith, b. 1693, m. 1718, Hon. Mann Page of "Roswell" Gloucester Co., son of Col. Matthew and Mary (Mann) Page.

4-4 Ann, b. 1696, m. Hon. Benjamine Harrison of "Berkley" Chas. City Co., son of Hon. Benjamine and Elizabeth (Burwell) Harrison, and had issue. Issue by second marriage.

4-5 Robert of Nomini Hall, Westmoreland Co. Va., b. 1705, d. 1732, m. Priscilla Churchill, b. 1705, d. 1757, dau. of Wm. and Elizabeth (Armstead) Churchill, Middlesex Co. Va. and had issue.

4-6 Charles of "Cleves" King George Co., b. 1707, d. 1764, served as Burgess 1736-48-64. Col. of King George Co. Militia, m. (1st) 1728, Mary Walker, dau. of Joseph Walker (2nd) 1742, Ann Byrd, dau. of Col. Wm. and Maria (Taylor) Byrd of "Westover" (3rd) 1763, Lucy Taliaferro, dau. Capt. Wm. and Ann (Walker) Taliaferro and had issue by all three.

4-7 George of Middle Temple, England, b. 1709, d. unkm.

4-8 Sarah, b. 1711, d. unkm.

4-9 Mary, b. 1712, d. 1736, m. 1732.

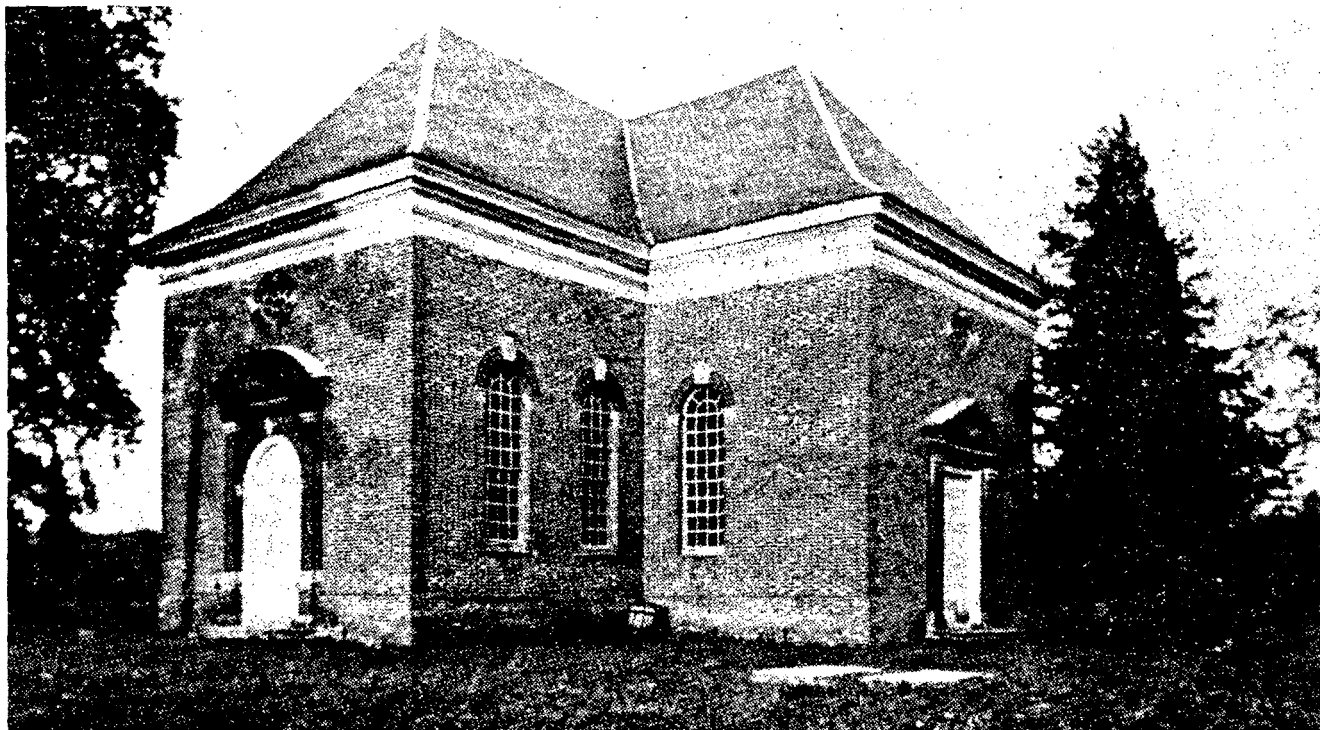
Hon. George Braxton of Newington King and Queen Co., and had issue.

4-10 Landon, b. 1713 of whom later.

4-11 Ludlow, b. 1714, d. unkm.

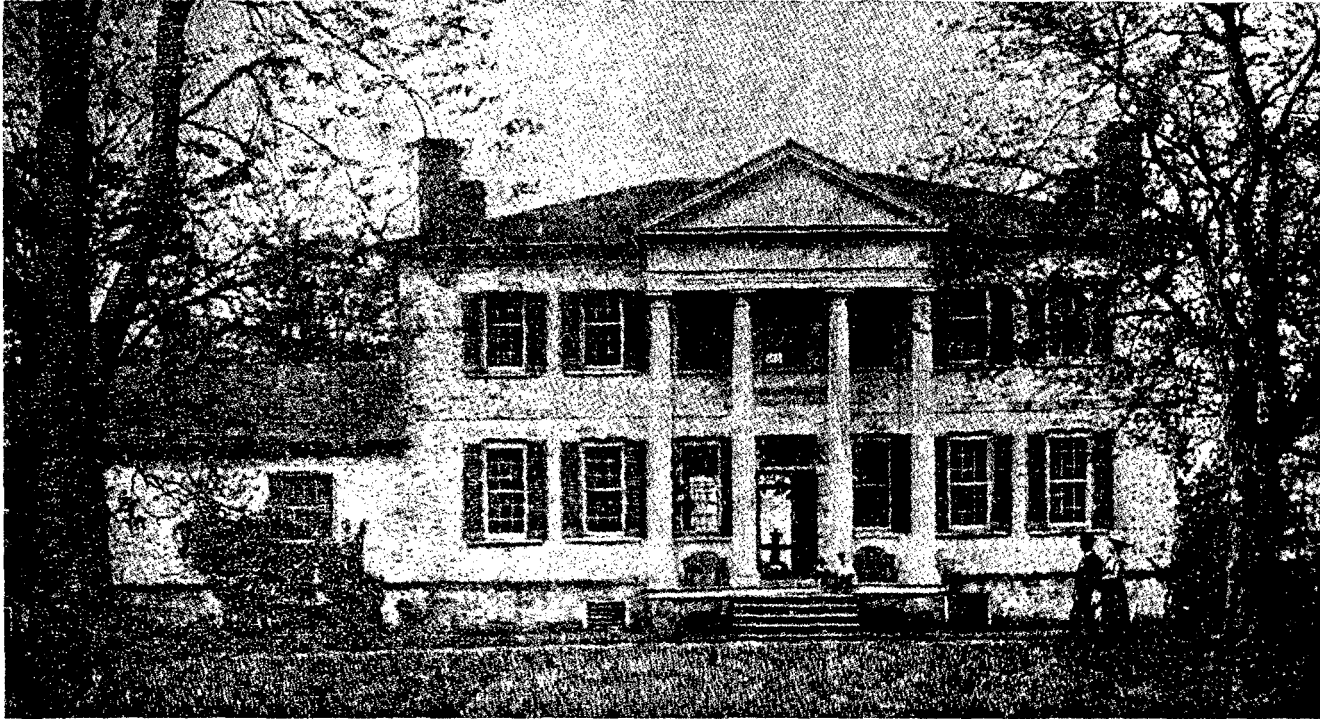
4-12 Lucy, b. 1715, m. (1st) Col. Henry Fitzhugh of "Eagles Nest" King George Co., son of Hon. Wm. and Ann (Lee) Fitzhugh of "Eagles Nest"; (2nd) Hon. Nathaniel Harrison of Brandson Survey, son of Hon. Nathaniel and Mary (Cary) Harrison of "Wakefield," and had issue.

4-10 Col. Landon Carter of "Sabine Hall," Richmond Co., b. 1713, the 4th son of Col. Robt. and Elizabeth (Landon—Willis) Carter of "Carotoman," served as Burgess 1748—64; was supporter of the Established Church. m. (1st) Elizabeth Wormley, b. 1714, d. 1749, dau. of Hon. John and Elizabeth Wormley of "Rosegill" Middlesex Co. (2nd) Maria Byrd, dau. of Col. Wm. and Maria (Taylor) Byrd of "Westover." (3rd) Elizabeth Beale, dau. of Thomas and



Christ ("King" Carter's) Church, between Irvington and Kilmarnock, Lancaster County, Virginia. Built in 1732.





Sabine Hall, Home of Landon Carter.



Elizabeth (Tavener) Beale of Rappahannock Co. Issue (1st) marriage:

5-1 Robert Wormley of "Sabine Hall," m. Winifred Tavener Beale, dau. of Capt. Wm. Beale of Richmond Co., and had among others:

6-1 Landon, b. 1757, d. 1820, m. (1st) Catherine Griffin Taylor, b. 1761, d. 1798, dau. of Hon. John and Rebecca (Plater) Taylor of Mt. Airy. (2nd) Mary B. Armstead, and had issue.

5-2 Elizabeth Wormley, a Revolutionary heroine. She saved the Communion Silver of the Parish Church from capture by Tarleton. m. 1756 Hon. Nelson Berkley of "Airwell" Hanover Co., son of Col. Edmund and Mary (Nelson) Berkley of "Barn Elms" and had issue.

5-3 Landon of Prince William Co., of whom later.

5-4 Hon. John Carter of "Sudley," Pr. Wm. Co., took a prominent and active part in affairs of Church and State; m. Janet Hamilton, had issue.

5-6 Judith.

5-7 Beal.

5-8 Lucy.

5-9 Fannie (untraced).

5-3 Landon Carter of Prince William County Virginia, m. Judith Fauntleroy, dau. of Hon. Moore and Margaret (Micou) Fauntleroy of "Crandall" Richmond Co., Va. and had four sons and four daughters as follows:

6-1 Elizabeth, d. unm.

6-2 Margaret, m. Robert Hooe.

6-3 Wormley, m. Sallie Edwards.

6-4 Charles Landern, m. Ann Stewart.

6-5 Mary, m. Alexander Bruce.

6-6 Moore Fauntleroy Carter, of whom later.

6-7 Judith, m. Dr. Isaac Henry, U. S. Navy.

6-8 John, m. Jane Edwards.

6-6 Moore Fauntleroy Carter, m. Judith Lee Edmonds, daughter of 5-4 Col. William Edmonds and

Elizabeth Blackwell, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Crump) Blackwell. Their issue among others were:

7-1 Helen, m. Dr. John Robert Edmonds (see Edmonds and Blackwell genealogy).

7-2 Elizabeth, m. James Blackwell (see Blackwell lineage).

7-3 Mary Evelina, m. Wm. Foote Edmonds (see Edmonds lineage).

7-4 Moore Fauntleroy Carter, m. Miss Simpson and had issue.

8-1 Agnes, m. Mr. Glenn of Pittsburgh, Pa. and had issue.

8-2 John, M. and went to Philadelphia.

8-3 Dr. C. Shirley, m. Miss Bowman, practiced medicine at Delaplane and Warrenton, Va., d.

8-4 Nannie, d. unm.

8-5 Delia, m. Dr. Sturgis of Marshall, Va. and had

9-1 Hebe, m. \_\_\_\_\_.

8-6 Lee, d. unm.

## 6. CHAPMAN

The first Chapman, of whom we have a record, was Wm. A. Chapman who m. Apr. 30, 1799 Catherine Gains, dau. of Edmund and Tabitha Gaines. Their son, Wm. A. Chapman, b. Jan. 14, 1808 in Madison Co., Va., d. Dec. 10, 1872, m. Nov. 17, 1837 Elizabeth Forrer, b. June 16, 1811, d. Jul. 28, 1891. She was descended from Christian and Elizabeth Forrer who were descendants of Daniel Fohrer and Anna Engel who came from Switzerland in the first half of the 18th Century. They had four children: 1. Christina. 2. Johannes. 3. Daniel. 4. Gottfried Abraham Christian. There is little known of them; but there is a record that Christian Forrer and his wife, Elizabeth, living in Lampteer Township, Lancaster Co., Pa. sold two parcels of land March 25, 1774, 50 acres and 18 acres and 42 perches. The first parcel was sold to them



by Daniel Fuhrer Jul. 5, 1762 who obtained it Jun. 13, 1760. Some of their descendants migrated to the Valley of Va. and settled around Luray in Page Co., then a part of Shenandoah Co.

William Allen Chapman and Elizabeth Forrer had ten children as follows:

1. Capt. (Rev.) Samuel Forrer Chapman, C.S.A. of whom later.

2. Col. William Henry Chapman, C.S.A. of whom later.

3. Edmond Gaines.

7. John Newton.

4. Hannah Catherine.

8. James Harvey.

5. Mary Elizabeth.

9. George Thomas.

6. Margaret Ann.

10. Andrew Jackson.

Capt. (Rev.) Samuel Forrer Chapman, Mosby's Rangers, C.S.A., was b. Aug. 27, 1838 and d. at Covington, Va. May 21, 1919. He m. Jul. 28, 1864 at Marshall, Va Eliza Rebecca Elgin, only child of S. Gustavus Elgin and Catherine Lewis Smith of Fairfax Co., b. Nov. 1846, d. 1900. There were nine children:

1. Ella Lee.

6. Paul S.

2. Edmund Gaines.

7. Herbert Douglas.

3. Elizabeth Forrer.

8. Beatrice Elgin.

4. William Allen.

9. Mary Lewis.

5. Gustavus Elgin.

Capt. Chapman acted as Chaplain in Col. J. S. Mosby's Command but was always foremost in a fight. He was appointed Chaplain in the Spanish American War 1898.

2. Col. Wm. Henry Chapman, C.S.A., b. Apr. 17, 1840, Madison Co., Va, d. Sept. 13, 1929, at Greensboro, N. C. He m. Feb. 25, 1864 Josephine M. Jeffries b. 1846, d. Dec. 31, 1927. She was the dau. of James Eustace and Esther (Foote) Jeffries, the son of Major Enoch and Agatha (Blackwell) Jeffries. Agatha Blackwell was the dau. of Major Joseph and Ann (Eustace Hull) Blackwell.

Col. Chapman was a student at the University of

Va. when the Civil War started. He went to Luray and became First Lieut. of the Dixie Artillery being organized by Capt. Bootan. Bootan resigned and Chapman became Capt. He resigned when the Company was merged with Pegram's Battery of Artillery and joined Col. Jno. S. Mosby's Rangers. He was second in command and one of Mosby's daring and most trusted officers. Mosby did not surrender but disbanded his battallion, after the War, at Marshall, Va. Chapman surrendered part of his command at Winchester as he heard that they would be punished if they did not surrender. Mosby and the Chapmans had a good friend in General U. S. Grant, who protected them and appointed them to public offices after the War.

Col. Chapman lived at Edge Hill on the road from Warrenton to Marshall. He moved from there to Alexandria, Va. His children were:

1. Major William A.
2. Esther Foote.
3. Elizabeth Forrer.
4. Rev. James Jeffries.
5. Rev. John H.
6. Katherine Forrer.
7. Samuel Forrer.
8. Mary Eustace.

Two children died in infancy, all of whom later.

1. Major William A. Chapman, Medical Corps, U.S.A. b. 1865, m. 1890 Jessie Peek of Cedar Town, Georgia, where he practiced medicine. He was Surgeon of the Georgia Immunes during the Spanish American War. Was Major in World War I. They had one child Josephine who m. 1913 Samuel W. Goode who d. 1946, issue Sarah Elizabeth Goode.

2. Esther Foote Chapman b. 1867, m. 1891 Rev. Robt. Upshur Brooking, Episcopal Church. They had four children: 1. Josephine Semple. 2. Esther Foote. 3. Wm. Chapman. 4. Rosa Osborn.

3. Elizabeth Forrer Chapman, b. 1869, m. Jul. 28, 1897 Rev. Dr. Wm. H. K. Pendleton of the Episcopal Church, son of Rev. Wm. H. and Henrietta Grymes (Randolph) Pendleton. They had six children, one d. inf. 1. Elizabeth Randolph b. 1898. In Govt. Service. 2. William Henry b. 1900, d. 1909 3. Robt. Randolph b. 1902 d. 1931. 4. Cary Verdien b. 1904, d. 1942. 5. Josephine Chapman b. 1911 m. 1941 Guy Marvin Fenstermacher, Tolford, Pa.

4. Rev. James Jeffries Chapman, Episcopal Church, b. Jul. 20, 1873, m. Sept. 1, 1900, Ellen Richie Scott. He was missionary to Japan about 20 years. d. 1946. They had seven children: 1. Claudia Marshall Willis. 2. Dennis Scott. 3. James Jeffries. 4. Ellen Richie. 5. Mary Jane Stuart. 6. Josephine Jeffries 7. William Wallace.

5. Rev. John H. Chapman, Episcopal Church, b. Aug. 6, 1875, m. June 1, 1905, Rosamond Curtis Low b. 1882. They had three children: 1. Eustace Blackwell. 2. Robert Low. 3. David Low.

6. Katherine Forrer Chapman. Residence Greensboro, N. C.

7. Samuel Forrer, b. 1879, m. Catherine Ann Hinkin. They had three children: 1. Catherine Virginia. 2. Mary Eustace. 3. Elizabeth Forrer.

8. Mary Eustace Chapman, b. Oct. 7, 1881, m. Herbert Newman, b. 1878. Issue Herbert Stanley Newman, Jr., b. 1916.

Copy of paper in the hands of Maj. William A. Chapman, M. C. USA, showing the descent of his mother through the Blackwell line.

The original of this paper is recorded in the Historical Society of Virginia, and on record in the Colonial Dames Society, Richmond, Va.

"These are the names of seven ancestors of Josephine Jeffries—Chapman, from whom eligibility for membership in the Society of Colonial Dames of America is derived.

Col. Edwin Conway, Capt. Henry Fleete, Capt.

William Ball, Hancock Lee, Richard Lee, William Kendall, and Major Joseph Blackwell.

COL. EDWIN CONWAY was born in Lancaster Co., Virginia, in 1681, and resided in the Colony of Virginia from 1681 to 1763. He died Oct. 3rd, 1763, in Lancaster Co., Va. He was a member of The House of Burgesses 1710-1742.

HENRY FLEET was born in England, and resided in the Colony of Maryland from 1637 to 1660. He died after 1660 in Virginia. He was a member of the Maryland Assembly in 1637, and House of Burgesses of Virginia in 1652.

WILLIAM BALL was born in England on June 2nd 1641, and resided in the Colony of Virginia from 16— to 1694. He died in 1694 in Lancaster County, Va. He was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1652.

HANCOCK LEE was born in Virginia in 1653, and resided in the Colony of Virginia from 1653 to 1709. Member of the House of Burgesses in 1688.

RICHARD LEE was born in England, and resided in the Colony of Virginia from 1646 to 1664. Member of the House of Burgesses from 1647 to 1651.

WILLIAM KENDALL resided in the Colony of Virginia from 1657 to 17—. Was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1657 and Speaker of House in 1666.

MAJOR JOSEPH BLACKWELL resided in the Colony of Virginia from 16— to 1787. He died in 1787 in Fauquier County, Virginia. Member of the House of Burgesses 1748—1749—1752—1753.

---

Josephine Jeffries—Chapman, being duly sworn says, she was born at "Edge Hill," Fauquier Co. Va. and is now a resident of Richmond, Va. She is the daughter of James Eustace Jeffries, and Esther Helm Foote, his wife. The said James Eustace Jeffries was the son of Agatha Blackwell, and Major Enoch Jeffries, her husband.

The said Agatha Blackwell was the daughter of Major Joseph Blackwell, and Anne Eustace, his wife. The said Anne Eustace was the daughter of Isaac Eustace, and Agatha Conway, his wife. The said Agatha Conway was the daughter of George Conway, and Ann Heath, his wife. The said George Conway was the son of Edwin Conway, and Ann Ball, his wife. The said Edwin Conway was the son of Edwin Conway and Sarah Fleete, his wife. The said Edwin Conway was the son of Edwin Conway (emigrant 1640) and Martha Eltonhead, his wife.

The said Sarah Fleete, wife of Edwin Conway (2) was the daughter of Col. HENRY FLEETE.

The said Ann Ball wife of Edwin Conway (3) was the daughter of Joseph Ball and Elizabeth Rogers, his wife.

The said Joseph Ball was the son of CAPT. WILLIAM BALL (emigrant) also the said Joseph Ball was the father of MARY WASHINGTON, and grandfather of GEORGE WASHINGTON.

The said Isaac Eustace, husband of Agatha Conway, was the son of William Eustace and Anne Lee, his wife.

The said Anne Lee was the daughter of HANCOCK LEE, and Mary Kendall, his wife.

The said HANCOCK LEE, was the son of RICHARD LEE (emigrant) and ancestor of ROBERT E. LEE.

The said Mary Kendall, wife of Hancock Lee, was the daughter of COL. WILLIAM KENDALL.

The said JOSEPH BLACKWELL, (Major) husband of Anne Eustace, was the son of Joseph Blackwell.

The said Joseph Ball's mother was Hannah Atherold, daughter of Thomas Atherold, Sussex, England.

---

#### REFERENCES

For offices of the seven ancestors herein recorded

see Stannards Colonial Virginia Register, pages 99, 70, 79, 36, 79 and Lee of Virginia, page 519.

For descent from Josephine Jeffries-Chapman to Edwin Conway see Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, pages 225, 273. To Henry Fleete, see Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, page 231. To William Ball, see Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, pages 238, 53. To Richard & Hancock Lee, see Lee of Virginia, page 519.

For descent from Joseph Blackwell, see Hayden's Virginia Genealogies, page 265, et, seg:

These are my ancestors through my father James E. Jeffries, and his mother Agatha Blackwell.

(SIGNED):

Josephine Jeffries-Chapman.  
Colonial Dame No. 1306.

A TRUE COPY: Wm. A. Chapman.

## 7. CONWAY

The ancestry of the Conway family is traced back to Sir Henry Conway, who was Knighted by Edward Mortimer, Earl of March and Ulster, about the beginning of King Richard the Second's reign. From Sir Henry descended John Conway, who had two sons Hugh and Edward. Hugh was knighted at the Coronation of Queen Elizabeth, but Edward was the Virginia ancestor. He m. Ann, the dau. and sole heir of Richard Burdet of Arrow. Edward d. leaving John, 35 years of age, who on an expedition into Scotland did so well that he was made a "Banneret." He m. Catherine, the dau. of Sir Ralph Verney Knight and left issue Sir John Conway Knight who m. Elene dau. of Sir Falke Grevill of Beauchamp's Court in Com Waw Knight. He was made Governor of Ostend 1586 by Robt. Earl of Leicester who was General of the English Auxiliaries. He died leaving Edward, his son and heir. Knighted by Robt. Earl of Essex in 1596

at the sacking of Tróde in Spain where he commanded a Reg't. of Foot. He served in the Netherlands as Governor of the Brill and was made one of the principal Secretarys of State. He was later made a Baron of the Realm with title of Lord Conway of Ragley, and later Captain of the Isle of Wight. He was also created Viscount Kiltulagh (Co. Antonio, Ireland) and Viscount Conway of Conway Castle in Com. Caernavon. He was afterward made Lord President of his Majesty's Privy Council and sent to Germany as Ambassador Extraordinary. He died at Westminster Jan. 3, 1630, and was buried at Ragley, leaving issue by his wife Dorothy, dau. of Sir John Tracy of Codrington of Gloucester, three sons:

1. Edward, his son and heir,
2. Sir Thomas Conway, Lieut. Col. to Col. Morgan in the wars of Germany.
3. Ralph, and four daughters: Frances, Brilliana and Heligawith, all of whom married nobles.

Edward succeeded to his title, and m. (1st) Frances, dau. of Sir Francis Popham, and d. in Paris, France 1655, leaving:

1. John, d. young.
2. Edward.
3. Francis.
4. Thomas, d. young, and two daughters: Dorothy and Ann. He m. (2nd) Katherine, dau. of Giles Haniblock of Gant Flanders, and had no issue.

Edward, his son and heir, succeeded to his title and m. Anne, dau. of Sir Heneage Finch of Kensington and had one son who d. young.

Edward Conway who m. Anne, dau. of Richard Burdet of Bramcote Warwick from whom the Lords Conway descended, had estates in Worcestershire, whence Edwin Conway of Va. came. There is a tradition that two brothers related to the Marquis of Hertford were exiled for political reasons and came to Virginia.

Sir Edward Conway and Capt. Thomas Conway

were members of the Va. Co. of Loudon, 1609-1620.

1-1 **Mr. Edwin Conway** of Worcester Co. Eng. came to Va. circ. 1640. He appears in the Northampton Co. records June 1642 as "Mr. Edwyn Clarke of this Com. in the Co. of Northampton." In the first grant of land to him, Oct. 1644, he is recorded as "Edwyn Connaway of Northampton Clarke." He was born in Worcester Co. Eng. circ. 1610, and d. Lancaster Co. Va., 1675. He m. (1st) 1640 in England Martha Eltonhead, dau. of Richd. Eltonhead, Esq. of Lancashire. He probably m. (2nd) a sister of John Carter, the first settler who made a deed in 1650 to his niece Eltonhead, the dau. of Edwyn Connaway. He was the 3rd Clerk of Northampton Co., Henry Bagwell being the 1st and Thomas Cook 2nd. His issue:

2-1 **Edwin Conway** of Lancaster Co. Gent. Probably born in Eng. 1640-4, d. Aug. 1698. m. (1st) Sarah Fleete, dau. of Lieut. Col. Henry Fleete of Lancaster Co. (2nd) Elizabeth Thompson, circ. 1695. Before his second marriage he conveyed his estate to his children by first m., and moved to Richmond Co. Issue 1st marriage.

3-1 **Col. Edwin Conway** of Lancaster Co., b. 1681, d. Oct. 3, 1763. He was a gentleman of very great parts and m. (1st) 1704, Anne Ball, b. 1686, dau. of Col. Joseph and Eliza (Romney) Ball of Lancaster Co., and half-sister to Mary Ball, the mother of Washington. (2nd) Ann Hack, b. 1697. He d. 1747, greatly lamented, being a gentleman of amiable character. He was a member of the House of Burgesses 1710 to 1742. Issue, 1st marriage.

4-1 **George Conway**, b.—, d. 1754, m. 1739 Ann Heath, b. May 9, 1721, dau. of Saml. Heath of North'd. Co. She m. (2nd) Travers Downman, b. 1726. His issue were:

5-1 Agatha (b. 1740—of whom later).

5-2 Edwin, b. 1742, d. 1765.

5-3 George, b. 1744, m. Ann Downman.

5-4 Peter Hack, b. 1746, died young.



- 5-5 Walker, b. 1748, m. 1775, Anne Moncure.
- 5-6 Anne, b. 1750, m. 1770 John Moncure.
- 5-1 **Agatha Conway**, b. 1740, d. Staff Co. Apr. 2, 1826, m. May 15, 1757 Isaac Eustace, son of William and Ann (Lee) Eustace. Had issue.
- 6-1 Agatha Ann, m. Gen. John Blackwell.
- 6-2 **Anne (Hull)**, M. Major **Joseph Blackwell**. (See Eustace and Blackwell lineage).

## 8. EDMONDS

Edmonds is a very old English family. Sir Thomas Edmonds was Ambassador to France and Comptroller to the House of King James. Robert Edmonds came to Virginia in 1619 in the Ship Mary-Gold and was living on the Eastern Shore in 1623. John and Richard Edmonds came about the same time but died before 1623. John Edmonds, age 16, came to Virginia in 1634. Sir Thomas Edmonds, born at Plymouth 1563, was the youngest son of Thomas Edmonds who was very prominent at Court and died in 1639. There was a Sir Clement Edmonds born 1566, died 1622.

The first Edmonds to settle in Virginia, whose descendants we can trace:

- 1-1 Elias, who died 1654 and left Edwin Conway, guardian of his two children. This was opposed by John Meredith Edmonds' overseer, as Conway was a Catholic and should not have charge of the children. Elias Edmonds married Frances ——— and had
- 2-1 William (of whom later) who married ———
- 2-2 A daughter who married Edwin Conway, her guardian.
- 2-1 William Edmonds children were:
- 3-1 Elias of Lancaster, (of whom later).
- 3-2 William
- 3-3 Lucy
- 3-1 Elias Edmonds was born 1673, m. ——— d, 1745.

His children were:

- 4-1 William (of whom later).
- 4-2 Robert
- 4-3 Frances
- 4-4 Elias
- 4-5 Ann
- 4-6 Elizabeth
- 4-7 Sarah
- 4-1 William Edmund b. 1704, d. 1741, m. 1st 1725  
Judith Sydnor, who d. 1734 m. 2nd Catherine Miller;  
children by 1st marriage were:
  - 5-1 Elias of whom later.
  - 5-2 Frances b. 1728, m. — John W. Bell.
  - 5-3 Joanna b. 1730, m. Ephriam Hubbard.
  - 5-4 William (of whom later) by 2nd marriage.
  - 5-5 John (of whom later).

These children were the 5th generation from Eliaas Edmonds the first settler. Elias and William came to Fauquier Co. in 1741 with their father who died shortly after. They settled about the middle of the county and John who came later settled in upper Fauquier. It is said that William Edmonds made a satisfactory will dividing his estate in Fauquier, then Prince William County between his two sons, Elias and William, one son making the division with the knowledge that the other should have the first choice. Elias Edmonds, the first settler, lived at the head of Carotoman Creek in Lancaster County. His will as recorded by Edwin Conway, his Executor, is dated and probated, March 27, 1654 (Estate Book 1.207).

- 5-1 Elias Edmonds I b. 1726, d. 1784, m. circ. 1750  
Elizabeth Miller, dau. of Simon Miller and Mary O'Bannon. He was an officer in Braddock's Army and also was a Magistrate in Fauquier Co. He did not take part in the Revolution and is supposed to have remained a Royalist as he, John Churchill and John Crump were not recommissioned magistrates by Governor Patrick Henry after the War.

His children were:

6-1 Elias Edmonds II b. 1756, d. 1800. He married his first cousin Frances, dau. of his uncle John Edmonds, who rejected John Marshall, later Chief Justice of the U. S., in favor of her cousin. When the War broke out, he was clerking at Dumfries in the store of Philip Lee, who was killed at Brandywine. He helped to raise a company; was appointed Lieutenant and went to war without informing his family as his father was a Royalist. For seven years he followed the fortunes of Washington's Army and the first thing that the family knew of his existence was when he appeared at home after the War with a full beard and in the uniform of a Continental Colonel which he had won for gallantry when he was 24. They did not recognize the smooth-faced boy who had left them to clerk at Dumfries. Shortly after the War, he was eating oysters in a restaurant at Dumfries when a man opposite to him commenced abusing Washington. He did not say a word to the man; but finished his oysters; got up, and, as the narrator put it, "took the fellow by the scruff of his neck and the seat of his trousers and threw him upon a big log fire in the fire place."

Col. Edmonds' Regiment was known as "The Culpepper Minute Men" composed of 150 men from Culpepper, 100 from Orange, 100 from Fauquier with Lawrence Taliaferro as Colonel and Thomas Marshall of Oak Hill, Va. succeeded him as Colonel later. He was the father of John Marshall, later Chief Justice of U. S., who was in the Regiment with Joseph Blackwell, Sr. and his two sons, Joseph and John and Martin Pickett as lieutenants. They were the first Minute Men raised in Virginia. They fought at Great Bridge, the first battle of the Revolution in Virginia and were with Washington at the Crossing of the Delaware, at Brandywine, Germantown, Valley Forge, Stony Point and at Paulus Hook with "Light

Horse Harry Lee." He was elected to the House of Delegates 1799 and died Dec. 5, 1800.

He was awarded \$5,000.00 by the Continental Congress for his service in the War with which his widow built "Edmonium", a large brick house about three miles from Warrenton on the right side of the road to Marshall. A beautiful cut glass light globe hung in the hall of Edmonium and the writer has it now hanging in the hall of his house "The Anchorage" in Arlington County, Virginia.

His children were:

7-1 Elias III

7-2 Octavia

7-3 Elizabeth (all of whom later).

In the division of the estate, Elias was awarded the "Mill Tract" on Cedar Run known as "Ivy Hill;" Octavia who m. Wm. Grayson was awarded a contiguous tract on both sides of the Winchester Road with present house of "Edmonium" now owned by Haserick and known as "Sunny Hill Farm." Elizabeth was awarded the remainder of the tract on the right side of the road.

7-1 Elias III b. circ. 1788, d. 1871, m. Adeline Saunders and lived at "Ivy Hill" near Warrenton. He was very hospitable and nearly every Sunday half a dozen or more of his friends, relatives and acquaintance would assemble at his house for dinner and to drink apple toddy, mint juleps and eggnog, which he always had on hand. His wife died early and his daughter, Adeline, presided for him. I remember many pleasant Sundays spent there as a boy. The old gentleman never asked a blessing; but when he finished eating, he would push back his chair and say, "Well, Thank Gawd." He was a Captain in the War of 1812 and was several times elected to the House of Delegates. His children were:

1. Judith Emma

2. Rodney

3. Elias IV

4. Fannie

5. Adeline

8-1 Judith Emma b. 1828, m. 1851 James DeRuyter Blackwell (See Blackwell lineage).

8-2 Rodney married, moved away. Had issue.

8-3 Elias Edmonds IV (Cousin Cap) b. 1829, d. circ. 1905, unm. He inherited "Ivy Hill" and continued to dispense hospitality at his home after his father's death. He was the most intimate friend of my father, Moore Carter Blackwell. He served in the "Warrenton Rifles" in the Civil War and was severely wounded and taken prisoner at the Battle of Seven Pines and remained until the end of the War. He was very much afraid of debt and once when he had to borrow \$500 his hand shook so he could hardly sign the note. In telling about it, he said, "I was scared worse than I was at the Battle of Seven Pines where I was shot all to pieces."

After his sister Adeline married and moved away, he rented his house to his nephew Elias Edmonds Blackwell, who had married my sister Fannie, and moved to a small house on the farm. He had a colored boy, Jim Green, about 15 years old, who kept house and cooked for him. He used to have a hard time managing Jim. On one occasion, he had a colored carpenter, "Daniel Brown" whom Jim did not like, building a cabin for him. One morning Dan'l could not find his brace and bit and accused Jim of hiding them. Jim swore he did not hide them. "Cousin Cap" took his knife and handed it to Henry Wines another boy who worked for him and said, "Henry, go down thar in the woods and get me a couple of hickories and carry them in the cow house and get a rope and a pan of salt water and put in thar." Jim was an interested listener and when Henry was through, "Cousin Cap" turned to Jim and said, "Now, Jim, you get them bits." Jim knew what it meant as he had heard of them tieing and flogging the slaves and washing their backs with salt water which hurt more than the flog-

ging. Jim disappeared and came back in half an hour and said, "Ole man Dan'l put dem bits up dar over de winder an forgot whar he put dem." He would not own up to hiding them. On one occasion, Cousin Cap was out in the woods with Pat O'Brien with the ox cart getting wood. The cart got stuck between two trees. He said "Pat, come here." Pat said, "Mr. Edmonds if I come thar the oxen will turn and break the tongue off." He said, "Pat, when I tell you to do a thing, you do it." Pat had hardly left before the oxen turned and broke the tongue. Pat turned around and pointed to the cart and said, "Thar, thar, thar." The old man just grinned.

8-4 Fannie Edmonds m. Wright James and had

9-1 Garland who d. unm.

8-5 Adeline Edmonds m. a cousin, Edward Gilbert Edmonds (Cousin Bud) but had no issue.

7-2 Octavia Edmonds b. circ. 1790, m. circ. 1810 William Grayson, son of Rev. Spense Grayson. She died in a few years and left one daughter Frances Edmonds Grayson, who was cared for by her grandmother, Frances Edmonds. She m. Richard Foote, son of William and Sarah (Alexander) Foote and had issue (See Foote lineage). She inherited Edmonium from her mother and it passed on to her husband Richard Foote. Her daughter Sarah Alexander Foote m. Moore Carter Blackwell (See Blackwell lineage).

7-3 Elizabeth Edmonds b. 1791, m. Joseph Blackwell, son of Major Joseph and Ann (Hull, Eustace) Blackwell. (See Blackwell lineage).

5-4 Col. William Edmonds, brother of Elias I, b. 1734, d. 1816, m. Mch. 16, 1764 Elizabeth Blackwell, dau. of William and Elizabeth (Crump) Blackwell, and their dau. Judith Lee Edmonds, m. Moore Fauntleroy Carter, grandson of Landon and Judith (Fauntleroy) Carter of "Sabine Hall." Elizabeth Carter, dau. of Moore Fauntleroy and Judith Lee (Edmonds) Carter, m. James Blackwell of "The Meadows," father of Moore Carter Blackwell (See Blackwell lineage).

Colonel Edmonds served as Captain in Braddock's Army in the French and Indian War in 1761. He also served in the Revolution as Colonel of the First Battalion of Virginia, Militia, 1778. He was with Washington's Army at the Crossing of the Delaware, at Brandywine, Germantown, Valley Forge, Stony Point and with Light Horse Harry Lee at Paulus Hook. He built Oak Spring, near Warrenton, and it went to his son William of Chestnut Grove, then to his dau. Elizabeth, who m. Joseph Blackwell and then to their son, James DeRuyter Blackwell, who m. Judith Emma Edmonds, dau. of Elias Edmonds III.

Col. Edmonds erected a large building in 1788 where Warrenton was later built and became a municipality in 1810. He named it the "Warren Academy" after the hero of Bunker Hill. He was President of the Board of Trustees and the members were: Martin Pickett, Humphrey Brooke, William Pickett, Edward Diggs, Francis Whiting, Gustavus Brown Horner and John Blackwell. The first vestry of Leeds Church in upper Fauquier consisted of Martin Pickett, Wm. Edmonds, Thos. Marshall of Oak Hill, John O'Bannon, James Scott, Henry Peyton, Wm. Pickett, Joseph Blackwell and others.

The children of Col. William Edmonds were:

- 6-1 William
- 6-2 Frances
- 6-3 Sarah (Sallie)
- 6-4 Elias
- 6-5 Mary (Polly)
- 6-6 Elizabeth
- 6-7 John
- 6-8 Lucy
- 6-9 James
- 6-10 Catherine
- 6-11 Judith Lee (All of whom later).
- 6-1 William Edmonds of Chestnut Grove, b. 1765, d. 1822, m. Hester Foote and had
- 7-1 Wm. Foote Edmonds b. 1801, d. 1868, m. his

first cousin Mary Evelina Carter and had twelve (12) children among whom were:

8-1 Doctor Wm. Sydnor Edmonds who lived in lower Fauquier. He m. 1st \_\_\_\_\_; 2nd Miss Bronaugh; issue by 1st m. were:

9-1 Mamie

9-2 John and others

8-2 Philip Mead Edmonds, b. 1840, d. 1912, m. Silena M. Slade, dau. of Juliana (Fitzhugh) Slade. Issue:

9-1 William Fitzhugh Edmonds, b. 1879, m. 1907 Maud Moss Nolan, and lived at Falls Church, Va. Issue:

10-1 William Donald Edmonds b. 1908, m. Kathleen Moffett. Issue.

11-1 Beverly Kathleen b. 1938.

10-2 Maud Evelyn Edmonds, b. 1910, m. Wells Jones. Issue.

11-1 Donald Wells Jones.

10-3 Audry Fitzhugh Edmonds, b. 1917, unm.

10-4 Carter Moss Edmonds, b. 1919, m. Ruby Lee. Issue.

11-1 Marcie Lee Edmonds.

8-3 Lilly Edmonds m. John Jeffries of Delaplane, Va. and had a son and a daughter who died young.

9-1 John Lillian Jeffries who m. Sadie Chapelear and had a son and a daughter and died —.

8-4 Edward Swift Edmonds (Cousin Ned) b. circ. 1850 d. circ. 1942, m. 1883 Ada Belle Chunn, dau. of Andrew J. Chunn and Isabella M. Ashby, dau. of Col. John Ashby, b. 1775 and served in the War of 1812. Their issue were:

9-1 Mary Evelina Edmonds, m. Fairfax Harvey.

9-2 Edward Chunn Edmonds, m. Charlotte Hampton. Issue.

10-1 Bernice

10-2 Edward

10-3 Mary Everlina

10-4 William



- 10-5 Richard
- 7-2 Sarah Belle (Cousin Sallie (d. unm.))
- 7-3 James Henry Edmonds, b. 1812, d. 1892, m. 1st Elizabeth Miller Blackwell, dau. of Joseph and Elizabeth (Edmonds) Blackwell. Issue.
- 8-1 Nannie Evans Edmonds, d. unm.
- 8-2 Elizabeth, m. Patrick Delaplane of Delaplane, had: 9-1 a son Frank, d. 4 yrs. old. 9-2 Channing Delaplane, Col. U.S.A. 9-3 Patrick Henry Delaplane. 9-4 Annie.
- 8-3 Octavia Edmonds, m. Walter Assheton of Rock Spring, Va. and England, and had
- 9-1 Elizabeth Grant, m. Wm. Henry Burch. Issue.
- 10-1 Elizabeth Ashton Burch.
- 9-2 Eleanor Hadow Assheton, m. 1st circ. 1901 Arthur Buell Gleason and had
- 10-1 Assheton Gleason, d. yng.
- 10-2 Walter Blackwell Gleason, b. 1904, m. Josephine Gasper.
- 10-3 Eleanor Graham. (She married 2nd Major Jerome Clark, U.S.A. She is an artist of considerable note.) James Henry Edmonds m. 2nd Frances Gordon and had
- 8-4 Henry Fitzhugh
- 8-5 Janie Milligan
- 8-6 Edward Eugene
- 8-7 George Lindsey
- 8-8 Tasker Mitchell
- 8-9 Ella Gordon
- 8-10 Lucy Fitzhugh
- 8-11 Laura Bell
- 6-2 Frances Edmonds, b. 1766, m. Robt. Green of Culpepper.
- 6-3 Sarah, b. 1767, d. unm.
- 6-4 Elias, b. 1768, m. 1st Helen Edmonds his first cousin, dau. of John Edmonds. Had children but all died. He married second, Sallie Battaile Fitzhugh and had two daughters, one married Nathaniel Gray and the other a Mr. Parrot and had issue. Elias and

Sallie were guests at Mt. Vernon in 1824 when La Fayette was there. A Mrs. Hart, near Warrenton, had a slipper that Sallie wore when she danced with La Fayette on that occasion.

6-5 Mary (Polly) b. 1770, m. Wm. Horner, son of Robert and Ann (Brown) Horner. Ann Brown was first cousin of Elizabeth Patterson of Baltimore, Md. who married Jerome Bonapart. She was one of the seven Brown sisters who were very beautiful and prominent socially.

6-6 Elizabeth Edmonds, b. 1771, m. Dr. James Westwood Wallace, educated at Edinburg, Scotland and was physician to Thomas Jefferson and James Monroe. His daughter Virginia Revolutiana Wallace m. Richard Foote (See Foote lineage).

6-7 John Edmonds (Beau John) b. 1775. He was elected to Congress but never married.

6-8 Lucy Edmonds, b. 1777, m. Robt. Green of Fauquier and had issue.

6-9 James Edmonds, b. 1779, m. Ann Roberson and had issue.

6-10 Catherine Edmonds b. 1781, m. George Payne.

6-11 Judith Lee Edmonds, b. 1783, m. Moore Fauntleroy Carter and their daughter, Mary Evelina Carter married her first cousin Wm. Foote Edmonds.

Moore Fauntleroy Carter was the grandson of Landon Carter of Sabine Hall, first cousin of Ann Hill Carter, the wife of Henry (Light Horse Harry) Lee, the father of General Robert E. Lee, C.S.A.

5-5 John Edmonds, b. 1737, d. 1798; born in Northumberland Co. was the youngest son of William Edmonds and Catherine Miller. He came to Fauquier after his brothers Elias and William and settled at Belle Grove in the upper part of the country.

He married first Jane Frances Wildy and second, Helen Hack. She was Helen Shepard, a noted English actress before her first marriage. John was an officer in the Revolution and a Colonel of Militia after the War. Issue.

6-1 John Edmonds, his son m. Naomi Hicks 1793 and had

7-1 Lewis Edmonds, (of whom later), m. Betsy Settle of "Belle Grove" near Paris, Fauquier Co., Va. (of whom later).

6-2 George Washington Edmonds who m. Mary Sophia Rust of Loudon Co.

6-3 Elias Edmonds, b. 1780, d. 1845, m. Alice Thornton Cocke, dau. of Capt. John C. Cocke of England, who served in the Revolution.

6-4 Frances Edmonds, who jilted John Marshall, later Chief Justice, U.S., for her cousin Elias Edmonds II, son of Elias I.

6-5 Helen Edmonds, who m. her first cousin Elias Edmonds, son of Col. Wm. Edmonds, had issue but all died. She died and Elias m. 2nd Sallie Battaile Fitzhugh. John Edmonds was vestryman of Leeds Church and his estate was part of the parish. He was known as "Fighting John" and claimed to be the best man in Virginia. One day a stranger approached him, saying he was the best man in Maryland, "come to 'lick' John Edmonds." They fought there in the road. Edmonds "licked" him and took him into his house until he recovered from this licking and they became good friends.

The record of John Edmonds; descendants is not complete. His son, John, m. Naomi Hicks 1793 whose son, Lewis Edmonds 7-1 m. Betsy Settle of "Belle Grove" near Paris which is part of the 1000 acres the first John Edmonds got in 1780 and has been in the family ever since.

7-1 Lewis Edmonds' daughter 8-1. Mary m. Dr. Albin S. Payne and their dau. 9-1 Betty Winter Payne m. Gen. Lindsay Lomax, C.S.A. and their dau. 10-1 Lindsay Lomax m. Waddy B. Wood, a noted architect of Washington; but they lived in Warrenton, Va. He d. 1945. Their daughter 11-1 Lindsay Wood m. Robt. Hadow the English Counsellor in Washington

and still lives there. The other children of Dr. Albin Payne and Mary Edmonds were:

9-2 Doctor Daniel Payne who died young.

9-3 Lewis Payne who studied law and was U.S. Attorney for the Territory of Wyoming, d. in Oklahoma.

9-4 Myra Payne, died at Manassas, Va.

9-5 Fanny S. Payne is living in Warrenton, Va.

Other children of Lewis Edmonds and Betsy Settle were:

8-2 Edward Gilbert Edmonds C.S.A. (Bud) lost an eye at the Battle of Yellow Tavern in the Civil War. He located near Warrenton and was treasurer of Fauquier Co. for many years. He m. his cousin Adeline, dau. of Elias Edmonds III of Ivy Hill, d. 1898.

8-3 Benjamine Sydnor Edmonds was also a Confederate soldier and went to Missouri after the War.

8-4 John Edmonds (Jack) was a great "Fiddler." d. unm.

8-5 Clement and 8-6 Chester were other brothers.

8-7 Elizabeth (Cousin Bettie) d. unm.

8-8 Amanda Virginia Edmonds m. John Armistead Chappelle and lived at Belle Grove where she died in 1922. Their children were:

1. Henry

2. Zulienna

3. Clayton

4. Curtis

5. Elizabeth (Bessie) Curtis lives at Belle Grove.

Another descendant of John Edmonds 5-5 was a Doctor John Robert Edmonds who m. Helen Carter, dau. of Moore Fauntleroy Carter and Judith Lee Edmonds. He went to Alexandria and died there and their children were:

1. Col. Edward Edmonds, C.S.A., killed in Pickett's Charge at Gettysburg. My father, M. C. Blackwell, was in his regiment of Gen. Armistead's Brigade and named me Edward for him. Gen. Armistead was killed there.

2. Roberta Edmonds, m. Jos. H. Blackwell (See Blackwell lineage).

3. Mary Edmonds m. William Garth of Charlottesville (See Garth lineage).

4. Sallie Edmonds m. Mr. Tallman, a police officer in Richmond, Va. and had two sons.

5. Judith Edmonds m. Jacob Lavender, one of Col. Jno. S. Mosby's most trusted men; had issue; went to Lynchburg, Va.

6. John Edmonds, C.S.A. was Commandant of cadets at Bethel Military Academy. He went to Texas and was Mayor of Sherman, Texas; was Colonel of a regiment in the Spanish American War. He was killed in a duel.

7. James Edmonds went to Texas with John.

8. Lena m. Mr. Graves.

### ROSTER OF CAPT. WM. EDMONDS COMPANY

**Enlisted in 1761 for Service in The French and Indian War.**

He was Capt. in Braddock's Army and was Colonel, First Battalion, Virginia Militia in the Revolution.

Martin Pickett, Lt.	Jos. Holtzclaw
Wm. Norris, Ensign	Wm. Bragg
Wm. Randdale	Alex. Jeffries
Simon Morgan, Sgt.	Jno. Boden
Edmund Basye, Sgt.	Stephen Baily, Patroller
Thos. Porter, Sgt.	Wm. Russell
Zohn Basye, Sgt.	Dan. Triplett
Jos. Smith, Sgt.	Carr Bailey
Sam'l Simpson, Corp.	Wm. White
Humphrey Arnold, Corp.	Wm. Wilson
Jos. Smith	Jno. Morgan
Wm. Underwood	Jas. Lambkin
Wm. Smith, Sr.	Wm. Pickett, Jr.

Jno. Miller	Thos. Bell
Thos. Smith	Thos. McClanahan
Wm. Robertson	Jas. Bell
Herman Hitt	Jno. Pickett
Henry Martin	Jno. Hitt, Jr.
Wm. M. Penison	Jno. Hitt, son of Joseph
Chattin Lambkin	Wm. Gibson
Wm. Ball	Simon Morgan
Rich'd Jackman	Law Taylor
Jas. Jeffries	Jos. Taylor
Jno. Russell	Jno. Raisey
Jos. Hudnall	Jno. Hudnall, Patroller
Wm. Norris	Jno. Hitt
Jos. Hitt	Thos Jackman, Jr.
Jeffrey Johnson	Wm. Smith, Jr.
Hugh Jaquitt	Jno. Blackwell
Chas. Martin	Peter Taylor
Henry Boatman	Jas. Oliver
Chas. Gamer	Jos. Carter
Geo. Horrion	Jas. Bailey
Jno. Duncan, Jr.	Jas. Pendleton

## 9. EUSTACE

1-1 **John Eustace** came to Virginia in 1676 with his wife Sarah Jauncey and her parents, William and Mary Jauncey. Sarah Jauncey died in 1682 leaving two sons, William and John.

2-1 **Capt. Wm. Eustace** m. Ann Lee, dau. of Capt. John Lee, (son of Hancock Lee, son of Rich'd. Lee, 1st settler) who m. Mary Kendall, (grand-dau. of Col. Wm. Kendall of Newport House, Northampton Co. Va.) and had issue.

3-1 **Major William Lee Eustaec**, b. Lancaster Co. 1719, m. Dec. 11, 1740 Ann Gaskins, dau. of Thomas and Mary (Conway) Gaskins. Major Wm. Eustace was living at Elk Run when Fauquier Co. was organized from Pr. Wm. Co., and was Warden of Hamilton Parish 1749. He was commissioned Major of Mili-

tia Aug. 23, 1759 and Sheriff of Fauq. Co. Sept. 1, 1769. He held the rank of Capt. in the 2nd Va. Reg't. during the Rev. War and received 1,000 acres of land for his services. He d. 1800. His son:

4-1 Isaac Eustace b. 1740, d. 1826, m. Agatha Conway b. 1740, d. 1826, dau. of George Conway. d. 1754, m. 1739 Ann Heath, dau. of Saml. Heath, North'd. Co. Issue of Isaac Eustace.

5-1 John, m. Maria ———— was Ensign 3rd Reg. Va. Line Oct. 7, 1780 to Jan. 1, 1781. Issue.

6-1 Agatha, m. Jas. Ewell 2—Ann, m. Willis Stork 3—Jno. Conway, m. Mary, dau. of William Ball, and had

7-1 Lucy, m. Robt. Graham Lowe of Texas 2—John Conway, C.S.A., killed in battle. 3—Nancy Carter, m. Wm. Fellows of New York 4—Wm. Tomlin of Texas 5—William, m. ———— Sydnor.

5-2 William, m. Ann ————, d. 1800, had

6-1 Lewis 2—Sarah 3—Hancock 4—William 5—Mary 6—Isaac.

5-3 Agatha Ann Eustace, b. 1765, m. 1779—Gen. John Blackwell (See Blackwell lineage).

5-4 **Anne Eustace**, b. 1766, m. (1st) Capt. Edward Hull. Killed enforcing conscription in Rev. War. (2nd) **Major Joseph Blackwell**. She was so patriotic that she was married in a cotton dress rather than a silk from England (Issue, see Blackwell lineage).

5-5 Captain Hancock Eustace, b. "Woodford," Staff Co., 1768, d. July 30, 1829, m. June 4, 1789 Tabitha Henry, dau. of Judge James Henry of Fleets Bay and Sarah Scarborough, dau. of Col. Edmund Scarborough of North'd. Co. Capt. Eustace was appointed Justice of Staff Co. 1793 and was President Justice many years. Was confirmed Aquia Episcopal Church 1796; Vestryman 1815-1823, Warden 1802. He was an officer in the War of 1812. Issue.

6-1 John Henry, b. 1791, d. 1864, m. 1817, Martha J., dau. of Dr. Wm. Wardlaw, Rich, Va. He was an original proprietor of the Athenaeum and Lyceum

of Richmond, Va., 1833—and other philanthropic societies. His issue were:

7-1 Wm. Maralaw, M. D., Grad. Med. Col. Va., b. 1818, d. 1872. Issue.

8-1 William 2—Frank 3—Conway.

6-2 Sarah M., b. 1793, d. 1825, m. 1812 Frederick M. Pleasants, son of John Pleasants. Came from Norwich, England 1665, about 25, settled in Henrico Co., and m. Jane Tacker. Issue.

7-1 Jane Elizabeth, b. 1813. 2—Sarah Maria, b. 1815. 3—Warren Hancock Eustace, b. 1818.

4—Caroline Matilda, b. 1820. 5—Fred Wm., b. 1823. 6—Charles James Blair, b. 1825.

6-3 Agatha Eliza., b. 1796, m. 1817. Gen. George Mason Cook, Staff Co., son of Jno. and Mary Thompson (Mason) Cook. Issue.

7-1 John Eustace, b. 1818. 2—George Mason, b. 1820. 3—Tabitha Va., b. 1822. 4—Sarah Maria, b. 1826.

## 10. FLEETE

William Fleete, gent, was incorporator of the 3rd Va. Charter, 1612. He was from Kent Co., Eng. and m. Deborah, dau. of Chas. Scott and Jane Wyatt. Issue:

1—George. 2—William. 3—**Henry**. 4—Brian. 5—Edward. 6—Reynolds. 7—John. 8—Catherine.

**Captain Henry Fleete**, (3) gent, St. George's Hundred, Md., and his brothers Reynolds, Edward and John, planters in Md., all came to Md. and Va. early and were members of the first Md. Assembly 1637-8. Capt. Henry Fleete appears frequently in the records of Md. and Va. He was one of the prominent associates of Gov. Calvert in establishing the Province of Md. He came to Va. before 1623 and was one of the twelve men under Henry Spelman who went to trade with the Anacostan Indians on the Potomac. He was



captured and taken to their dwelling near where the Washington Monument now stands. During his four years of captivity he learned their language and was invaluable thereafter as an interpreter. He made several voyages to England. In 1644 Lord Calvert commissioned him as Captain General to make a treaty of peace with the Susquahannah Indians and in 1645 Va. employed him against the Indians for 15,000 lbs. of tobacco. In 1650 Capt. Fleete was located on Fleete's Bay, Northumberland Co., Va. and received 1750 acres of land for 35 persons he brought into the province. He received several other grants of land for persons he brought into the Colony. He did a great deal toward building up the colonies of Md. and Va. His name is nearly forgotten, and the place where he was buried is unknown. He appears to have lived alternately in Va. and Md. He attained the rank of Lieut. Colonel. The name of his wife is unknown; but his daughter, Sarah Fleete, married Col. Edwin Conway (See Conway lineage).

Col. William Kendall's daughter, Mary, married Hancock Lee, son of Col. Richard Lee, the first of that family to settle in Va. He lived in Va. from 1657 until after 1700, and was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1657 and Speaker of the House in 1660. (See Lee and Steptoe lineage).

## 11. FOOTE

The Footes are very numerous in New York, Massachusetts and Connecticut and have a reunion every year. They are descended from Nathan Foote of Colchester, England who came to Watertown, Mass. in 1630 and Pasco Foote who came to Salem, Mass. shortly after and Richard Foote, who came from Cornwall, England later and settled in Stafford County, Virginia. Tradition has it that the three were brothers. The New England family of Footes is very numerous and have formed an Association of several thousand members.

One of the first Footes of whom we have a record is James Foote. In the Battle of Worcester, Sept. 3, 1651, Charles II with a Scottish Army of 10,000 was defeated by Cromwell and came near being captured; but James Foote got him away and hid him in the branches of a large oak tree and Cromwell and his soldiers passed under the tree looking for Charles. For this service Charles knighted James Foote and gave him a coat of arms, the crest of which is an oak tree.

**Richard Foote** was born in Cardenham, Cornwall, England, Aug. 10, 1632. He was the son of John Foote. He m. Dec. 19, 1657 Hester, dau. of Nickolas Hayward of London, a grocer who carried on an extensive trade with Virginia. Richard's sons, William and Richard were the first to settle permanently in Virginia. They were sent over by Nickolas Hayward, their uncle, to look after his interests.

1-1 **Richard Foote**, b. Jan. 31, 1666, came to Virginia toward the close of the century and settled in Stafford Co., Va. and d. March 29, 1729. His will was dated April 15, 1724.

2-1 **Richard Foote**, his son, born 1702, m. Aug. 6, 1726, Katherine Fossaker.

3-1 His son, William, m. Sarah Alexander, dau. of Col. Wm. Alexander (see Alexander lineage); their son Richard m. Frances Grayson, dau. of Wm. Grayson and Octavia Edmunds and had Sarah Alexander Foote who m. Moore Carter Blackwell. See Blackwell lineage.

George and **Richard Foote** and **Robert Bristow**, merchants of London and **Nicholas Hayward**, uncle of **William** and **Richard Foote**, who came to Virginia, patented with George Brent, 30,000 acres in Stafford County, Virginia in 1689. Richard Foote was appointed Justice of Stafford Co. in 1745. Richard Foote, m. Jane, dau. of Rev. Wm. Stuart of King Georges Co. and their son, Richard Foote of Prince William County m. Margaret and d. 1778, leaving Richard and William Hayward, both very young.

3-1 **William H. Foote**, b. about 1760, m. about 1783 Sarah Alexander, b. Nov. 22, 1767, and d. 1804. She was the 17th generation of descent from John Alexander, Lord of the Isles; their issue were 14 as follows:

4-1 George            4-2 William            4-3 Alexander

4-4 Philip        4-5 John            4-6 Jilson.

4-7 **Richard**, b. circ. 1790, and d. circ. 1862 in Fluvanna Co. on his way back from Texas where he owned a large estate. m. (1st) circ. 1820 Frances Grayson, dau. of (William Grayson) and Octavia Edmonds, (2nd) Virginia Revolutiana Wallace, dau. of Doctor Wallace of Warrenton, Va. (Of whom later).

4-8 Frederick, m. three times. His home was "Waverly" near Haymarket, Pr. Wm. Co., Va.

4-9 Edmund d.

4-10 Mary Stuart, b. Dec. 18, 1794, m. John Whitney Massie.

4-11 Sigismunda Alexander, m. (1st) John Ashton of King George Co. (2nd) Charles B. Stuart of Prince William Co.

4-12 Gerard

4-13 Stephen

4-14 Ann, m. Judge Taylor of Mississippi.

4-7 **Richard H. Foote**, b. circ. 1790, m. circ. 1820 Frances Grayson, who d. circ. 1840; issue by 1st marriage.

5-1 William Grayson

5-2 John Francis

5-3 Frances Eleanor, b. circ. 1827, d. circ. 1900, m. Henry Smith, b. 1817, d. 1884. Issue. See Smith lineage.

5-4 **Sarah Alexander**, b. 1832, d. 1922, m. 1854 **Moore Carter Blackwell**. (See Blackwell lineage.)

5-5 Richard Henry

5-6 George Grayson

Issue by second marriage; Virginia Revolutiana Wallace.

5-7 Wallace went to Texas; was killed in a fight.

5-8 Virginia Fitzgerald, d. unm.

5-9 Elizabeth Wallace, a very beautiful woman, d. unm.

## 12. GASKINS

The Gaskins were early settlers in Northumberland County, Va. The name was originally Gascony and one of their early residences "Gascony" is still standing in Northumberland County. The Gaskins inter-married with the Balls, the Conways and other prominent families of Virginia. Col. Thomas Gaskins seems to have taken a prominent part in public affairs about the middle of the 18th Century. John Hancock Gaskins married Frances Sinah Cole and had

5-1 John Hancock Gaskins b. 1781, d. 1851. He m. 1802 Ann Blackwell b. 1786, d. 1873, oldest daughter of Major Joseph and Ann (Eustace) Blackwell and 5th generation of the Blackwell line. They had seven (7) sons and seven (7) daughters.

6-1 Alfred Gaskins, the eldest, b. Jan. 16, 1805, d. Jan. 15, 1873. He married first Ellen Davenport and had

7-1 A daughter who died in infancy.

7-2 John Alfred of whom later. He m. (2nd) Mary Reynolds and had

7-3 Richard d. young.

7-4 Ellen who m. Arthur Triplett and had

8-1 Kate m. Arthur Nelson and had issue. 8-2

Carol 8-3 Nassamenter 8-4 Erva 8-5

Alfred 8-6 Mary, Carol and Alfred went to Baltimore, Md. and were very successful in business. Carol died later.

7-5 Kate, died young.

7-6 Sophronia who lived to be over 80. d. unm.

7-2 John Alfred Gaskins, b. 1834, d. 1894. m. circ. 1860 Ellen Robertson, Issue.

8-1 Charles, d. in infancy.

8-2 Francis Davenport, b. Nov. 10, 1862. Frank was quite a mathematician and a great horseman. He

managed the "Horse Shows" at Warrenton for many years and was Trial Justice in court for many years. He was an all around useful citizen.

8-3 Lucy Ellen (twin) b. circ. 1865, m. David Duncan, son of Bishop Duncan and had

9-1 John, d. infancy.

9-2 Epie, unm.

9-3 Susan, m. John Owington and had issue.

10-1 Joan 10-2 Susan.

9-4 Ellen

9-5 Evelyn, m. Sardi Mace.

9-6 David, Jr.

Lucy Ellen was an artist of considerable note. She painted a portrait of Doctor Walter Reed of the U. S. Army who discovered and demonstrated that the mosquito was the carrier of malarial fever. The portrait is in the Walter Reed Army Hospital, Washington, D. C. She d. circ. 1942.

8-4 Elizabeth M. (twin) b. circ. 1865, d. circ. 1944.

8-5 Isabelle Vanmeta, who contributed to The Fauquier Democrat.

8-6 Susan M. was assistant Matron and housekeeper at Randolph Macon Academy at Front Royal for some years, d. 1946.

### 13 GRAYSON

Benjamin Grayson and sister emigrated from Scotland to Westmoreland Co., Virginia, and later he became a merchant at Dumfries, Va. which was then an important seaport. He was Col. of Va. Militia in 1740 and m. (1st) Mrs. Linton, formerly Mrs. Tyler, whose maiden name was Susana Monroe, sister of Spense Monroe, the father of President Monroe; (2nd) the widow Ewell of the family of Gen. Ewell, C.S.A. He died at Bell Air, Pr. Wm. Co. in 1757. Susana Monroe's father was Andrew Monroe, who m. Eleanor Spense. Benj. Grayson's sister m. Mr. Harrison, father of Col. Burr Harrison, of the Revolution.

The issue of Benj. Grayson and Susana Monroe were three sons and one daughter as follows:

2-1 Benjamin, b. 1730 and m. Miss Osborne and had one son, Benjamin, who m. Miss Bronaugh of London and left a large family of children and fine estate. One daughter m. Bronaugh of London.

2-2 Rev. Spense Grayson, b. 1732—of whom later.

2-3 Col. William Grayson, b. 1736, d. 1790, was the first Senator from Va. and was a most trusted Aide-de-Camp of Washington. He was Col. of one of the 16 Additional Continental Reg'ts. and at one time had the command of a Brigade. He organized a company of Cadets in 1774, anticipating war. He m. Miss Smallwood, sister of Gen. Smallwood and ex-Governor of Maryland. Issue.

3-1 Alfred William, who m. Miss Breckenridge and had one son, John Breckenridge, who was an officer in the U.S.A. and afterwards Gen. C.S.A. He m. Miss Searle and had one son, John Breckenridge of Demopolis, Ala.

3-2 Hebe Grayson, Col. Grayson's only daughter, m. John Carter of Loudon Co. and they went to Kentucky. Her eldest son, Alfred Wm. Grayson, lived in Tennessee.

2-4 Susan Monroe, Benjamin Grayson's only daughter, never married, and it is said that Benjamin, her brother, squandered her property and she was cared for by her brothers Spense and Wm.

2-2 Reverend Spense Grayson, b. 1732, d. 1798. He inherited Belle Air, a fine mansion, with 1,000 acres of land attached, on the Potomac River in Pr. Wm. Co., Va. from his father and m. 1759 Mary Elizabeth Wagoner. He and his brother, Col Wm. Grayson, graduated at Oxford. He studied theology in England and was ordained by the Lord Bishop of London May 29, 1771. He returned to Va. and preached in Loudon Co. In 1784 he succeeded Rev. John Scott as Rector of Dettingen Parish, Pr. Wm. Co., Va. where he died

and was succeeded by Rev. Thos. Harrison. He was Chaplain in his brother, Col. Wm. Grayson's Reg't. during the Revolution, and Justice in Pr. Wm. Co. in 1769. His issue were six sons and eight daughters, as follows:

3-1 Catherine, b. 1760, m. John Hedgeman of Stafford, Issue:

4-1 John Grayson; 2—George; 3—Mary; 4—Susan Monroe Grayson; 5—Catherine.

3-2 Benjamin, b. 1761, m. Miss Taylor, an English lady. He went to Kentucky and became Clerk of the Court at Bardstown Nelson Co. and had issue:

4-1 Frederick Wm. Spense, who was an eminent lawyer and judge. He m. Miss Ward and died without issue. 4-2—Alfred, m. Miss Coalter of Baltimore, Md. He was an officer in the Marine Corps and at Norfolk in the War of 1812. In 1824 he commanded the Marines in Porter's fleet against the pirates off the coast of Florida and in the West Indies and on his return, died of yellow fever a few hours after his landing. He left,

5-1 Frederick Wm. Spense; 2—John Contee; 3—Alfred.

4-3 Peter Wagoner m. Miss Taylor and went to Texas in 1830; took an active part in the struggle for independence and went twice to Washington as a Commissioner. He was nominated for President of Texas, but died on his way to Washington before election. There is a county in Texas named after him.

4-4 Elizabeth, m. Philip Quentin, who soon died and she m. James D. Breckenridge, son of Gen. John Breckenridge, who soon died leaving one daughter, Eliza Grayson Breckenridge m. Shakespear Caldwell of Va., and left issue,

3-3 Mary, b. 1764, m. 1794, James R. Dermott, an Irish gentleman, and d. 1795 without issue.

3-4 **William**, b. 1766, m. 1st Octavia Edmonds, dau. of Col. Elias Edmonds II; and had issue, Frances m.

Rich'd. Foote. He m. (2nd) his first cousin, Mary Elizabeth Wagener in 1793, and d. in Washington in 1808. Issue by 1st marriage:

4-1 Frances Edmonds Grayson, who m. Richard Foote and had Sarah Alexander Foote who m. Moore Carter Blackwell (See Foote & Blackwell lineage). Issue by 2nd marriage:

4-2 Peter Wagener, who entered the U.S.A., d. without issue.

4-3 Sarah, m. Dr. M. B. Melvin of Washington, D.C.

4-4 Frederick Wm. Spense, b. Colchester, Va., m. Miss Bowen and left issue.

4-5 George Washington, who went to New Baltimore, Fauq. Co., became a merchant and had issue:

4-6 John Thomas, m. in Miss. and left one daughter who m. Mr. Magee.

4-7 Edward, m. a wealthy widow in Natches, Miss. and died without issue.

3-5 Susana Monroe, b. 1768, m. Lund Washington, Feb. 1793, of Colchester, Va., son of Robt. Washington and Alice Strother, d. 1822. Issue:

4-1 Lund Washington, b. Dec. 1793, m. Sarah Biggs, 1819, and had two daus. (1) Virginia, (2) Hebe. He was connected a long time with the State Department in Washington, and died in 1849.

3-6 Ann, b. 1772, d. inf.

3-7 Spense Monroe, b. 1774, d. 1829, m. Sarah Blount of Alex., Va. and had issue:

4-1 Spense Monroe, b. 1815, he m. Sarah R. Chew. Issue:

5-1 Emma; 2—Martha; 3—Spense Monroe;  
4—Claude; 5—Columbus; 6—Louisa.

3-8 Ann, b. 1776, d. 1793.

3-9 John Robinson, b. 1779; 3-10 Thomas Robinson, b. 1779 (Twins).

As boys they went to sea together on the Brig Polly under Capt. Hamilton; John was impressed by the British in the Texel off the coast of Holland, but



was released in 1800. He commanded a small squadron of gun boats on the Southern coast for some years under Commodore Campbell. He retired from the U. S. Navy after the War of 1812, and took charge of a Liverpool packet. He m. Frances Harvey of Savannah, Ga., and had issue:

4-1 John L.; 2—Frances Lucretia.

Thomas was impressed from the same vessel as his brother off Calcuta, India, and was never heard from afterwards.

3-11 Judith, b. 1780, m. George W. Lindsay. Issue:

4-1 John Grayson, who was 6 feet 6 inches tall the day he was 16.

4-2 George Frederick, who went to West Point; resigned from the Army, and settled in Miss. He married a Miss Smith and afterwards went into the Marine Corps and died in 1857.

3-12 Beverly Robinson, b. 1782, went to Miss. 1802, and was Registrar of the Land Office. He m. Mrs. Sarah Bowie of Calvert Co. Md., formerly Miss Chew, sister of Wm. L. Chew, the father of Sarah R. Chew who m. Spense Monroe Grayson.

3-13 Sally, b. 1784, m. 1809 Hon. Samuel Smith, Member of Congress from Penna. Issue:

4-1 Frederick William; 2—Elizabeth; 3—Freeland; 4—Samuel.

3-14 Caroline, b. 1786, m. Jas. Hewett of Md. went to Alabama. Issue:

4-1 Mary; 4-2 Sarah.

#### 14. JEFFRIES

Eustace Jeffries and his older brother Joseph lived together near Bethel Academy. They never married; but their house was a "rendazvous" for friends and relations from the upper and lower parts of the County and adjoining Counties. They were very generous in helping the negroes and poorer class of people. They had a good deal of stock and loaned out horses

indiscriminately. They loaned me a horse to use when I started practicing medicine. All the students at Beth-el Academy used to call them "Cousin Joe" and "Cousin Eus."

When the negroes and "poor whites" would come around begging for food, Cousin Eus and Cousin Joe would abuse them for being shiftless and no count; but they rarely let them leave without a "midlin" of meat or a peck of meal. They lived rather primitively in a very good house. I can remember going there in winter and seeing two fence rails with their ends crossed burning in the fire place, and the other ends sticking out into the room. As the ends would burn off, the rails would be pushed to keep the fire going, which saved chopping the wood. They were the most generous hearted pair I ever knew. They had a grist mill on the place which supplied the neighborhood with meal.

5-1 Major Enoch Jeffries of Fauquier Co. Va. m. Agatha Blackwell (5-4) dau. of Major Joseph and Anne (Eustace Hull) Blackwell. Issue:

6-1 James Eustace Jeffries b. 1818, m. Hester Foote. Issue:

7-1 Josephine Jeffries, m. Col. William Chapman, one of Col. John S. Mosby's most trusted Rangers. Issue. See under Chapman.

6-2 Joseph Jeffries, b. circ. 1819, d. unm.

6-3 Enoch Jeffries, b. circ. 1821, m. Judith Payne and lived at "Fenton" near Warrenton, Va. Issue.

7-1 Mary Jeffries, b. circ. 1852, m. William Chewning, Dr. of Dental Surgery, Fredericksburg, Va. Issue.

8-1 William Chewning m. Miss Metz and had issue:

9-1 Jeffries Chewning who m. Miss Cousins, dau. of Senator Cousins. Issue:

10-1 Jeffries Chewning.

8-2 Ann Chewning, unm.

- 7-2 James Jeffries, b. circ. 1854, m. Mamie Wyre dau. of Rev. Dr. Wyre of Warrenton, Va. James practiced law in Warrenton. Issue.
- 8-1 Nannie Jeffries, m. Anton Santi of Porto Rico, W.I.
- 8-2 James P. Jeffries.
- 7-3 Marshall Jeffries, b. circ. 1855, m. Mary Lovell. dau. of Judge John Lovell of Front Royal, Va. Issue:
- 8-1 Susan Payne Jeffries, m. Dr. Swetnam of Fairfax, Va. and had issue:
- 8-2 Elizabeth Payne Jeffries.
- 8-3 Sallie Marshall Jeffries served as a nurse in Europe in World War I.
- 8-4 Mary Keith Jeffries.
- 6-4 John D. Jeffries, b. circ. 1922, lived in upper Fauquier Co., m. Lilly Edmonds and had issue.
- 7-1 Lillian Jeffries, m. Misr. Chapelear.
- 7-2 A daughter died young.
- 6-5 Eustace Jeffries, b. circ. 1823, d. unm.
- 6-6 Lucy Jeffries b. circ. 1826, d. —.

## 15. KEITH

The Keiths of Fauquier Co., Va. are descended from an ancient and honorable Scottish Clan, and from Edward III, King of England. Lord Keith, Earl of Marischal of Scotland, in 1455; m. Elizabeth Gordon, dau. of Alexander, the first Earl of Huntley and his wife, Annabella Stuart, dau. of King James I of Scotland and great grand dau. of King Edward III of England.

- 1-4 Alexander Keith, their 4th and youngest son, m. unknown and had:
- 2-1 John of Pittendrum who m. his cousin, Barbara Keith. Their issue were:
- 3-1 Alexander      2—Robert and      3—William.
- 3-2 Robert, m. unknown and had among others.
- 4-1 James, b. in Scotland and d. in Virginia 1758—

60. He had to leave Scotland for taking the part of the Pretender in 1715, but returned to England for orders and was Rector of Hamilton Parish from 1732 until his death. He m. Mary Isham Randolph, dau. of Thomas and Judith (Fleming) Randolph of "Tuckahoe," Henrico County, Va. Issue:

5-1 James of Frederick Co., Va. was Clerk of the Court—60 years. He m. unknown and his issue were:  
1—John    2—James    3—Catherine.

5-2 John of Fauquier Co., Va., m. Miss Doniphan; issue:

6-1 Thomas    2—Alexander    3—Peyton    4—Anderson  
5—George    6—Isham and 3 daughters, unknown.

5-3 Thomas of whom later.

5-4 Alexander of Fauquier Co., Va.; served with distinction in Rev. War. He m. and went to Tenn. and had

6-1 Charles Edward, a distinguished Judge.

5-5 Isham of Fauq. Co. served with distinction in the Rev. War; had    1—Catherine    2—Isabella

5-6 Mary Randolph, b. 1737, d. 1809, m. 1754 Col. Thos. Marshall of Oak Hill, Fauq. Co., Va. father of Chief Justice John Marshall.

5-7 Elizabeth, m. Edward Ford; had issue 13 children.

5-8 Judith, m. James Key, son of Francis and Ann Arnold (Ross) Key of Maryland; had issue 7 children.

5-3 Capt. Thomas Keith of Fauq. Co., Va.; served with distinction in the Rev. War; was a staunch member of the Episcopal Church. He m. 1774 Judith Blackwell, dau. of Joseph and Lucy (Steptoe) Blackwell. (See Blackwell lineage) issue:

6-1 John Marshall, m. Elizabeth Jones and had issue.

7-1 John    2—Joseph    3—Mary    4—Lucy    5—Judith.

6-2 Harriet, m. James Skinker and had issue:

- 7-1 Sally 2—James.
- 6-3 Mary Isham, m. James Payne.
- 6-4 James, untraced.
- 6-5 Susan, m. David James and had issue.
- 7-1 John Wright 2—Aldridge 3—Sally 4—  
Fleming 5—Mary 6—Marshall.
- 6-6 Isham of whom later.
- 6-7 Polly, m. Daniel Payne of Fauq. Co., Va. Issue:
- 7-1 Mary 2—Daniel 3—Judith.
- 6-6 Isham Keith of Fauq. Co., Va., b. 179—, d.  
1887, m. 1822 Juliet Chilton, b. 1800, dau. of Joseph  
and Anne (Smith) Chilton of Fauq. Co. Issue:
- 7-1 Isham Keith, b. circ. 1830, m. Sarah Agnes  
Blackwell, dau. of William Steptoe and Ann Spark  
(Gordon) Blackwell. He graduated at the University  
of Virginia, served with distinction in the C.S.A. in  
the "Black Horse Cavalry." Issue.
- 8-1 William Steptoe, b. 1855, d. 1879; unnm.
- 8-2 Julian Chilton, b. 1859, m. (1st) 1880 Mary  
Lapsly, dau. of Judge Lapsly of Anniston, Ala.  
(2nd) 1905 Margaret Barry, dau. of Maj. R. P. Bar-  
ry of New York. Julian was a very daring horseman  
and used to ride and jump horses at the Warrenton  
Horse Show after he was 80 years old. Issue by first  
marriage.
- 9-1 Lucien, b. 1890, d. —.
- 9-2 Mary Lapsly, b. circ. 1893, m. Gen. John B.  
Rose, son of Alex. F. and Lucy Steptoe (Blackwell)  
Rose; Issue. See Blackwell—Rose lineage.
- 9-3 Isham, m. Lucy Burwell, dau. of Rev. Burwell of  
Fuaq. Co., Va. Issue by second marriage.
- 9-4 Margaret Barry, m. James Hamilton. Issue:
- 10-1 Margaret 10-2 James 10-3 Barry.
- 9-5 Julia Stuyvessant, m. Melville Bearn. Issue:
- 10-1 Melville 10-2 Stuyvessant 10-3 Keith.
- 9-6 Elizabeth Chilton, unnm.
- 9-7 Helen, m. Charles Peck, had one child.
- 8-3 Lucien b. 1860, d. 1934, m. Elizabeth Sharpless,

- dau. Samuel Sharpless, Philadelphia, Pa. No issue.
- 8-4 Margaret, b. 1861, d. 1936; Robt. Neilson of Phila., Pa.; had issue 2 sons.
- 9-1 Robert, m. Eleanor, Uniontown, Pa. Issue.
- 10-1 Margaret K. 10-2 Ruth Wood 10-3 Edward Steptoe.
- 8-5 Ann Gordon, b. 1863, m. Edward Spilman. No issue.
- 8-6 Katherine Isham, b. 1865, unm.
- 8-7 Isham, b. 1867, d. 1936, m. Jessie Lee Hall. Issue:
- 9-1 Isham 9-2 Jessie Lee.
- 8-8 James, b. 1869, m. 1918, Josephine Noble, dau. of Samuel Noble, Anniston, Ala. Issue.
- 9-1 Steptoe, unm.
- 9-2 Sarah, m. Hugh Robertson. Issue:
- 10-1 Sarah Keith 10-2 Hugh M.
- 9-3 Katherine, m. Blaine McCord—no issue.
- 9-4 James, unm.
- 8-9 John A. C., b. 1871, d. 1915, m. Mary Welby Scott, dau. of Maj. R. Taylor and Fannie (Carter) Scott, a very eminent lawyer. Issue:
- 9-1 Taylor Scott, Lt., U.S.N., m. Eleanor Hudgins, Issue twins:
- 10-1 R. Taylor Scott 10-2 Martin Langhorne.
- 9-2 John A. C. 9-3 Fanny Carter 9-4 James.
- 8-10 Thomas Randolph, b. 1873, d. 1937, m. Edith Morris Moore, sister of Hon. R. Walton Moore, Assistant Secretary of State and Counsellor for the State Department under President Franklin D. Roosevelt. Issue:
- 9-1 Ann Gordon, m. Carlos Drake; had issue.
- 10-1 Betsy Gordon 10-2 Thomas Keith 10-3 Carlos.
- 9-2 Hannah Morris, m. Dr. Chas. P. Howse; issue:
- 10-1 Charles P. Jr. 10-2 John.
- 9-3 Margaret Randolph, m. Loicis E. Jeffries, Washington, D. C.
- 7-2 Judge James Keith, a very eminent lawyer and

jurist. He was Chief Justice of the Court of Appeals of Virginia for many years; he m. (1st) Liliias Morson and (2nd) her sister Frances B. Issue:  
 8-1 Juliet Chilton    8-2 Arthur A.    8-3 Morson.

## 16. LEE

The Lees of Virginia are of very ancient lineage, being descended from—

- 1—Warin the Bold.
- 2—Hugh Fitzwarin.
- 3—Hugo de Lega.
- 4—Reyner Reginaldus de la Lee.
- 5—Johns de Lee.
- 6—Sir Thomas de la Lee of Lea (Hall) and Alderton.
- 7—Thomas de la Lee of Stanton (d 1318).
- 8—John Lee of Stanton and of Berrington.
- 9—John Lee of Roden.
- 10—Roger de la Lee, Lord of Roden, Sheriff of Shropshire. m. Margareta, dau. and heir of Thomas Astley, of Nordley Co. Calop Regis 1423 and 24.
- 11—John Lee of Nordley, ancestor of the Lees of Nordley and Coton. m. Jocosa, dau. of ——— Packington.
- 12—Johannes Lee de Nordley in Co. Salop. m. Elizabetha, dau. and coheir of Thomas Corbyn.
- 13—Thomas Lee of Kings Nordley, parish of Alorby Co. Salop (d. 16 Mch. 1526). m. Johanna (Joan) dau. of Robert Morton of Houghton Co. Salop.
- 14—Humphrey Lee of Coton Hall, manor of Kings Nordley (d. Dec. 6, 1588) m. Katherina, dau. of John Blount of Yeo (Eye) d. 1591.
- 15—John Lee of Coton Hall (aged circa 59 in 1588/9) m. Joyce, only dau. of John Romney of Lusley Co. Worcester, bur. Alorby 4 Dec. 1609. They had 8 sons, five of whom were Thomas, William, Edward, Gilbert and Richard.
- 16—Richard Lee m. Elizabeth Bendy at Alveley 21

Oct. 1599. He left Alveley to live at Stratford Langthorne Essex. Gilbert Lee, his brother, was a leather merchant trading with Va., and his ship fought the Spanish Armada. Richard Lee's son, Richard, emigrated to Va.

1—**Col. Richard Lee** of Stratford Langton Essex Co. Eng. came to Va. in 1641 and settled first at Poropotank Creek Gloucester Co. Va. In 1651 he moved to Dividing Creek, North'd. Co. He served as Attorney Gen. 1643 and Burgess 1647-51. Secretary of the Colony 1649-52 and was an influential member of the King's Council and Justice, and supporter of the Established Church. He is said to have been the first white man to settle permanently in the Northern Neck of Va. He died at Dividing Creek, North'd. Co. Mch. 1, 1664. He married Anna, family name unknown. He had eight children as follows:

2-1 John, b. 1645, d. 1673, unm.

2-2 Col. Richard of Mt. Pleasant, Westmoreland Co., b. 1647, d. 1711. Member of King's Council and House of Burgesses. m. Letitia Corbin, had issue:

2-3 Francis of London, Eng., b. 1648, d. 1714, m. and had issue.

2-4 **Hancock**—of whom later.

2-5 William of North'd. Co., b. 1651, d. 1695. m. and had issue. Member of House of Burgesses 1680-93.

2-6 Anne, m. Capt. Ewell.

2-7 Elizabeth.

2-8 Charles, Major of Cobbs, d. 1701. m. and had issue.

2-4 **Hancock Lee** of Ditchley, North'd. Co., b. 1650, d. 1729. He served as Justice of Northampton Co. 1677, moved to North'd. Co. 1688 and built Ditchley. He was a liberal supporter of the Established Church and gave a communion cup to Ditchley Parish in 1711. He m. (1st) Mary Kendall, dau. of Col. Wm. Kendall of "Newport House," Northampton Co. Burgess of Northampton County Va., 1657, Collector 1667, Burgess 1662-3-86, being speaker the last year.



He was the grandfather of Mary Kendall, who married Capt. John Lee, her first cousin, son of Hancock Lee, and their daughter, Anne Lee, married Capt. William Eustace, whose son, Major William Eustace had Isaac Eustace the father of Ann Eustace (Hull) who married Major Joseph Blackwell. See Blackwell lineage. (2nd) Sarah Elizabeth Allerton, dau. of Col. Isaac and Elizabeth (Willoughby) Allerton and grand-daughter of Isaac Allerton, the Mayflower Immigrant and his wife, Fear Brewster, dau. of Elder Wm. Brewster, founder of Plymouth Colony, New England. Issue of Hancock Lee by 1st m.

3-1 William (untraced).

3-2 Richard—of whom later.

Issue by 2nd m.

3-3 **Capt. John**, m. Mary Kendall, gr. dau. of Wm. Kendall. Issue:

4-1 **Anne Lee**, m. Capt. Wm. Eustace, son of John Eustace of Gloucester Co., who came to Va. 1676 with his wife, Sarah Jauncey who d. 1682 leaving two sons, William and John.

3-4 Isaac (Untraced).

3-5 Hancock, Fauq. Co., b. 1709, d. 1780, had issue.

3-6 Anne, m. Wm. Armistead, Matthews Co., and had issue.

3-7 Elizabeth, m. Zachary Taylor of Orange Co., son of James and Martha (Thompson) Taylor of Orange Co., and had issue.

3-2 Richard Lee of North'd. Co., b. 1681, d. 1740, m. 1700 Judith Steptoe, dau. of Anthony and Lucy (Stephen) Steptoe of Lancaster Co., and had issue as follows:

4-1 Elizabeth, m. Maj. Peter Conway.

4-2 Kendall, m. 1749, Betty Heale, d. 1780.

4-3 Stephen (No Record).

4-1 **Maj. Wm. Eustace** b. Lancaster Co. 1719, son of Capt. Wm. Eustace and Ann Lee (4-1) m. Dec. 11, 1740, Ann Gaskins, dau. of Thomas and Mary (Conway) Gaskins, their son.

- 5-1 Isaac Eustace m. Agatha Conway, b. 1741, d. 1829, dau. of George Conway and Ann Heath. Issue.  
6-3 Agatha Ann Eustace, m. Gen. John Blackwell.  
6-4 Ann Eustace (Hull) m. Major Joseph Blackwell (see Blackwell and Eustace lineages).

## 17 SMITH or SMYTHE

John Smythe, Yeoman, settled in the parish of Corsham Wilts, England, in the early part of the reign of Henry II, 1552 to 1635, upon a freehold, which descended from father to son for two centuries. There is a record of a John Smythe who left by his will in 1496 a considerable sum of money to be expended in "masses for my sowle." He also left a weaving mill to his son "John Smythe clothier" who died in 1538.

The next generation rose above the rank of yeoman and clothier and was described as "John Smythe Gentleman" and was given a coat of arms. One of his younger sons, Thomas went to London and married the Lord Mayor's daughter. He had seven sons and five daughters. He obtained the privilege of farming the customs of the port of London and its dependencies from Queen Mary, which was confirmed by Queen Elizabeth. From this, he was known as the Customer. He died in 1591. As his oldest son, Alfred, had died, he was succeeded by his second son, Sir John Smythe of Ostenhanger Castle, born in 1554, married 1576 Elizabeth, daughter of John Fineux of Herne, Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

Sir Thomas Smythe, his son, born in 1599, was a small child at his father's death and Lord Seye was appointed guardian. Charles I made him a Knight of the Bath and in 1628, he was made a Peer of Ireland, Viscount Strangford. He married 1628, Barbara, daughter of Robert Sydney first Earl of Leicestershire.

Sir Philip Smythe, his son, born 1634, second Viscount of Strangford, was a year old at his father's

death and Sir Thomas Fotherly was appointed his guardian. In 1650 he married Isabella Sydney, the youngest of the beauties of Penhurst, while Lady Dorothy the oldest daughter married Sir Robert Smythe, treasurer of the London Company of Virginia. Philip's wife died in 1663 and he married Mary Porter, granddaughter of Endymion and Lady Olive Porter, by whom he had five sons, two of whom, Thomas Sydney and Robert Sydney came to Virginia.

At the death of Sir Philip, Penhurst passed to his brother, Robert Smythe, Viscount of Lisle, Baron Sydney of Penhurst and (1618) Earl of Leicester. Robert married a Welsh heiress, Barbara Gamage, and had three sons and eight daughters. One of his sons, Robert was made Knight of the Bath in 1615. He married Lady Dorothy Percy, daughter of the Earl of Northumberland and niece of Captain George Percy. Their eldest daughter, Dorothy, born 1617, married Lord Spencer, Earl of Sunderland, who fell in the battle of Newberry, 1643. Nine years after, she married Sir Robert Smythe of Bounds Hill, Kent Co., and was the mother of Robert. Many Virginia families have the name Percy.

Thomas Joseph Smith, Gentleman, son of Sir Sydney Smythe, was known as Captain Joseph Smith, born in 1718 in Richmond Co., Va., divided into Fauquier Co. He married Kitty Anderson, daughter of Sir Walter Anderson of Wales. Colonel in the British Army. He was Captain in the American Revolution and his family in England disowned him. He built the Smith's ancestral home in Fauquier Co., Va., Mt. Eccentric. He had Thomas Smith, born 1739, died 1801, who married Mary Elizabeth Keith, aunt of Chief Justice John Marshall. Thomas had Caleb Smith, the father of Governor William Smith of Va., "Extra Billy" twice Governor of Va.

Captain William Smith, 2nd son of Capt. Thomas Joseph Smith and Kitty Anderson, was born in

1741 and died in 1803. He married Elizabeth Doniphan. He inherited Mt. Eccentric. Their son, Col. William Rowley of the War of 1812, born 1781, died 1857, married 1809 Lucy Steptoe Blackwell, daughter of Major Joseph Blackwell, and Ann (Hull) Eustace. (See lineage of Col. Wm. Rowley Smith).

Walter Anderson Smith of Mt. Eccentric, son of Capt. Wm. Smith and Elizabeth Doniphan, born 1779, died 1845, married Catherine Morehead; had two children, Elizabeth who married Major Triplett of Fauquier Co. and Presly Alexander Lycargus Smith, born at Mt. Eccentric 1809, married first the sister of General and U.S. Senator Eppa Hunton. She lived less than a year and he married Eliza Gordon Peyton. She died and he married Mrs. John Heath Hunton whose first husband was a brother of General Hunton. Her maiden name was Amanda Butcher. She was a very beautiful lady and a descendant of the brother of Sir Francis Drake. Their children were:

1. Andrew Jackson, b. 1845.
2. Lizette Gordon, b. 1847.
3. Mary Butcher, b. 1849.
4. William Worth, b. 1851 (of whom later).
5. Franklin Pierce, b. 1854.
6. Henry Lewis, b. 1856.
7. John Walter, b. 1858.
8. Kathleen Boutwell, b. 1861.
9. Presley Alexander Lycurgus, b. 1861 with whom I went to school at Bethel Military Academy 1880-84.

William Worth Smith married Lucinda Lewis of Cedar Hill near Broad Run, Fauquier Co. They were very popular and had many parties and dances in their delightful home with many guests from the neighborhood, Washington and Alexandria. Their children were:

1. Eugenia, who married Mr. Brookfield and lives near Springfield, Fairfax Co. on an estate in-

herited from her father. She is very energetic and progressive and has been Regent of the Fairfax County Chapter of the D. A. R. some years.

2. Lucy Montgomery Price.

3. Judge Howard Smith of Alexandria, Representative in Congress of the 8th District of Va. for a number of years and one of the ablest Representatives Virginia has ever had.

4. Senator William Worth Smith of the Virginia Legislature.

Colonel William Rowley Smith of "Alton Farms" Fauquier Co., Va. was the son of William Smith and Elizabeth Doniphan. He was born 1781 and died in 1857. He married Lucy Steptoe Blackwell (1809), daughter of Major Joseph and Anne (Eustace-Hull) Blackwell. He served as Justice of the Peace of Fauquier Co. 1810-1852 and was for years President Justice. He commanded a Company of Cavalry in the War of 1812 and was made Colonel of Militia in 1815. He was a member of the State Legislature three terms. Their issue were thirteen (13) sons and five (5) daughters as follows:

- 6-1 Joseph Blackwell.
- 6-2 William.
- 6-3 Ann Eustace.
- 6-4 Catherine Elizabeth.
- 6-5 Henry.
- 6-6 Richard M.
- 6-7 Robert, C.S.A.
- 6-8 Agnes Conway (twin), d. unm.
- 6-9 Lucy Blackwell (twin)
- 6-10 Mary Frances.
- 6-11 James Madison.
- 6-12 Capt. Edwin, C.S.A.
- 6-13 Anderson Doniphan, C.S.A.
- 6-14 Arthur.
- 6-15 Harriet.
- 6-16 Major Albert Gallatin, C.S.A.

6-17 Benjamin Franklin, C.S.A.

6-18 Isaac Eustace, C.S.A.

6-19 Thomas, b. 1839, d. inf.

The twelve sons were tall men. Their combined height was seventy-three (73) feet or an average of six feet and one inch, the tallest being 6 feet 4 inches and the shortest 5 feet 10 inches. Of all these later.

6-1 Joseph Blackwell Smith, b. 1810, m. 1834 Jane E. Towson of Stafford. He taught the Evergreen Public School and was Professor of Elocution at Bethel Military Academy, d. circ. 1890. Their issue were:

7-1 Wm. Rowley, Capt., C.S.A., b. 1836, d. 1864; was one of Mosby's most valued officers. Killed at Loudon Hts., m. 1857 Carrie Fletcher, dau. of Jno. Fletcher.

7-2 Lucy Eleanor, b. 1838, m. 1858 Lemuel Fletcher, C.S.A. 8th Virginia Cav., son of Josh. Fletcher.

7-3 Thomas Towson, Maj., C.S.A., b. 1840, served as Lieut. and Capt. 8th Va. Cav., Q. M. of Brigade and Post Q.M. in Richmond under Gen. Pemberton; in 1868 m. Anna Miller. Issue: 8-1 Louise. 8-2

Mary Ella. 8-3 Towson E. 8-4 Anna.

7-4 Norman, Capt. C.S.A., b. 1844, killed 1863. Captain on Staff of Gen. B. S. Ewell, 1861—63.

7-5 Blackwell, M. b. 1846, m. 1874 Lucy Blackwell Smith, dau. of Henry and Frances (Foote) Smith; moved to California circ. 1890. Had issue:

7-6 Rosa Jane, b. 1850, m. 1872 Wm. B. Smith of Upperville, Fauquier Co.

7-7 Alexander Doniphan, b. 1859, d. 1881.

7-8 Ida, b. 1860, d. circ. 1890.

6-2 William Smith, b. 1812, m. (1st) Mary Glasscock, dau. of Aquilla Glascock, Fauquier Co. (2nd) Virginia Towson, dau. of Thos. Towson of Williams port, Md. Issue by first marriage.

7-1 Aguilla, C.S.A., b. 1840, killed at battle Seven Pines.

- 7-2 David, Capt. C.S.A., b. 1843, d. 1864; killed in battle.
- 7-3 Susanna, b. 1845, m. 1866 Wm. H. Lewis, C.S.A.; served in the "Black Horse" Cav., Son of Col. Henry Lewis issue:
- 8-1 Henry, Aquilla, Richard and others.
- 7-4 Lucy Blackwell, b. 1847, m. 1872 Channing Smith, C.S.A., one of Stuart's most valued scouts; lived at "Montana" between Delaplan and Markham. d. circ. 1915. I taught private school for the neighborhood there 1884-'86. Issue:
- 8-1 Wm. Aquilla, m. Fanny Herndon and had issue, d.
- 8-2 Robert C., d. unm.
- 8-3 Mary E., d. unm.
- 8-4 Ellen P. m. and went to Maryland.
- 8-5 Roberta m. and went to Maryland.
- 8-6 Susan taught public school in Fauquier Co..
- 8-7 David m. had issue, went to St. Louis, was successful in business, returned to Va.
- 8-9 Harry Lee m. had issue. Lived at "Montana"; d. 1944.
- 7-5 Thomas, b. 1848, m. 1873 Elizabeth Skinker, dau. of James K. Skinker of "Huntley," Fauquier Co. and had issue:
- 7-6 Anna, b. 1852, m. 1883 B. Fletcher.
- 6-3 Ann Eustace Smith, b. 1814, m. 1832 Moncure Conway Nutt, b. 1812; issue:
- 7-1 Wm. Conway of Kansas, b. 1833, d. 1856.
- 7-2 Julia Travers, b. 1836, m. 1855 Wm. Sparke Blackwell, C.S.A., son of Wm. and Ann Sparke (Gordon) Blackwell.
- 7-3 Olivia Downman, b. 1839, m. 1860 Henry Lee.
- 6-4 Catherine Elizabeth Smith, (Cousin Betty), b. 1815, m. 1837 Wm. Hunton who d. 1856. Issue:
- 7-1 Wm. Smith, C.S.A., b. 1841, member "Black Horse" Cavalry, 4th Reg.
- 7-2 Lucy Blackwell, b. 1843, m. 1879, Col. Wm.

Eustace Gaskins, C.S.A., son of Jno. Hancock and Ann (Blackwell) Gaskins.

7-3 Henry Smith, C.S.A., b. 1845, d. 1881, member of "Black Horse" Cav.

6-5 Henry Smith, b. 1817, d. 1884, m. 1844 Frances Eleanor Foote, sister of my mother. He was a noted mathematician and County Surveyor of Fauquier for a number of years. Their home was "West View" near Broad Run Sta. Fauq. Co. Issue:

7-1 Frances Grayson, b. 1846, m. 1874 Rev. John Davenport Blackwell, D.D., son of John and Rebecca (Davenport) Blackwell. See Blackwell.

7-2 Lucy Blackwell, b. 1847, m. 1874 Blackwell M. Smith, son of Joseph Blackwell and Jane E. (Towson) Smith and had issue. d.

7-3 Agnes Conway, b. 1849, m. 1875 Alpheus Strother and had issue. d.

7-4 Sigisimund, b. 1851, d. unkm.

7-5 Sarah Alexander, b. 1854, m.—— Gordon Smith and had issue:

8-1 Gertrude.

7-6 Henry, b. 1856; m. 1st Lucy Boutwill; Issue:

8-1 Eleanor, m. Col. Cassat; 8-2 Henry, 8-3 Kathryn and 8-4 Conway. m. and had issue. He m. 2nd. Nannie White, nee Blackwell. No issue.

7-7 Robert Conway, b. 1858, d. Nicaragua 1881.

7-8 E. Sumpter, b. 1861; University of Virginia graduate and taught at Staunton Military Academy and at Bethel Military Academy and was for years Principal of Randolph Macon Academy, Bedford, Va. He m. Elizabeth Quinby and d. He was very popular. Issue.

8-1 Georgia b. circ. 1894, m. Capt. Thomas Gray, U.S.N.

8-2 Quinby b. 1897, d. 1938.

8-3 Edith Sumpter, b. circ. 1901, m. Robt. Wingfield. Prof. Psychology Converse College, Columbia, S. C.



7-9 Eugene Albert, b. 1866, d. 1933, m. 1890 Blanche Cowper of Gatesville, N. C.

Albert was my favorite cousin. He graduated at Bethel Military Academy, went to the University of Virginia, taught school at Temperanceville, Va. where I succeeded him. Was principal of the Warrenton Public School for a number of years and was quite prominent in public affairs in Fauquier County. Issue:

8-1 Maj. Gen. Cowper Smith, U.S.A., b. circ. 1891, m.

7-10 Mary Davenport, b. 1868, m. 1897 Brig. Gen. Francis A. Winter, MC. U.S.A., b. Louisiana 1868, who served in the Spanish American and World Wars, d. 1931. Issue:

8-1 Mary Stuart, b. 1898, m. 1921 Capt. Edmund Gillette Chamberlain, U. S. Marine Corps. b. San Antonio, Tex. 1891. She is an authoress of note. Issue:

9-1 Mary Stuart, b. San Antonio, Tex. Mch. 12, 1923.

9-2 Edmund Gillette, b. San Antonio, Tex. Oct. 9, 1926.

7-11 Effie, b. 1870, unmm.

6-6 Richard M., b. 1819, d. 1872. A distinguished educator and editor; founded the Warren Green Academy and filled the chair of Science, R. M. College; established the Virginia Sentinel and edited the Richmond Enquirer, m. 1839 Ellen Harris Blackwell, dau. of John and Rebecca (Davenport) Blackwell. Issue.

7-1 Rebecca Davenport, b. 1842, d. 1864.

7-2 William Waugh, C.S.A., b. 1845. He taught at Bethel Military Academy; was President of Randolph Macon College and of Randolph Macon Woman's College at Lynchburg which he, under the M. E. Conference South, founded along with the Randolph Macon Academies at Front Royal and Bedford, Virginia; d. no issue. He was assistant to his father and Reporter C.S. Congress; m. (1st) 1867 Ella Jones; (2nd)

Mary Howison, dau. of Capt. S. S. Howison, U. S. N.  
7-3 to 7-8 d. inf.

7-9 Richard McAllister, b. 1860, m. Minnie Banks.  
He graduated at Bethel Military Academy where he  
was an honor man having taken the scholarship medal;  
also at the University of Virginia; studied in Ger-  
many; taught at Bethel Military Academy and Ran-  
dolph Macon College and other schools. Issue:

8-1 Richard McAllister and others.

6-7 Robert, C. S. A., b. 1820, m. 1856 Mary Hooe,  
dau. of Rice Hooe. Issue:

7-1 Elizabeth Rice, b. 1857, m. Francis Blackwell,  
son of Jas. De Ryter and Judith Emma (Edmunds)  
Blackwell. No issue.

7-2 Catherine Bontwell, b. 1858. Unm. d. 1947.

6-8 Agnes Conway, b. 1822. Twin. d. unm.

6-9 Lucy Blackwell, b. 1822. Twin. m. 1842 Joseph  
Blackwell, son of John and Rebecca (Davenport)  
Blackwell. Issue.

7-1 Wm. 2—John. 3—Joseph. 4—Lucy d.  
inf.

7-5 Edwin Smith, 1849, m. 1878 Anna Leavell, dau.  
of John Leavell of Culpepper Co., Va. See issue under  
Joseph Blackwell 6-1.

7-6 Agnes Conway, b. 1852, d. 1877.

7-7 James, d. inf.

6-10 Mary Frances, b. 1824, m. 1843 Thomas Tow-  
son of Stafford Co. Issue.

7-1 Agnes Conway, b. 1845, m. 1868 Augustus Dun-  
lop, son of Hon. Robt. P. Dunlop, Gov. Maine.

7-2 Wm. Smith, b. 1846.

7-3 Eustace, b. 1848.

7-4 Lucy Blackwell, b. 1849, m. 1879 Henry Camp-  
bell.

7-5 Elizabeth, b. 1852.

7-6 Robert, b. 1855.

6-11 James Madison, b. 1825, m. 1880 Ella Rust. Is-  
sue:

7-1 Ella, b. 1882.

6-12 Capt. Edwin, C. S. A., born 1827, d. 1869; served as Quarter Master on Staff of Gen. Wm. Smith, m. 1852 Mary Ward, dau. of Berkley and Hanniah (Fitzhugh) Ward. Issue.

7-1 Caroline B., b. 1853, m. 1874 Rev. John S. Lindsay, rector of St. James Episcopal Church, Warrenton, Va. and St. Paul, Boston, Mass.; elected Assistant Bishop of Alabama but declined.

6-13 Anderson Doniphan, Capt., C.S.A., b. 1829; served in Subsistence Dept. Black Horse Cav., m. 1853 Susan Norman of Stafford Co. Issue.

7-1 Elizabeth, b. 1854, m. 1881 Howard Edwards. Issue.

8-1 Mildred. 8-2 Bland.

7-2 Thomas W., M.D., b. 1855, d. 1907. m. Mary James Blackwell, dau. of Moore C. and Sarah A. (Foote) Blackwell. Graduated at Bethel Military Academy and at the College of Physicians and Surgeons, Baltimore, Md. and took a post graduate course in New York City. He was Surgeon of the Cadet Corps at Bethel Military Academy and practiced in the country around there. He was a typical "Family Doctor," beloved by all who knew him and very active in the affairs of the community. See issue under M. C. Blackwell.

7-3 Emma Norman, b. 1857, m. circ. 1885 Dr. A. A. Marstellar. Issue.

8-1 Pauline.

8-2 Acalphar, Surgeon, U. S. Navy, b. m.  
Issue 2 sons.

7-4 Anderson Doniphan, b. 1863, m. studied law University of Va., went to Montgomery, W. Va. to practice; became Judge.

6-14 Arthur, b. 1830, d. 1831 (6-15) Harriet, b. 1832, d. 1833.

6-16 Albert Gallatin, Major, C. S. A., b. 1834, d. circ. 1895; served in 17th Va. Rgt. as 1st Lieut. in 38th Va. as Adjutant; was promoted Major for gallantry at Drewery's Bluff and Gettysburg; served under Col.

Edward Edmonds who was killed at Gettysburg; m. 1858 Elizabeth Carter Blackwell, dau. of James and Elizabeth (Carter) Blackwell. Issue:

7-1 Elizabeth Blackwell, b. 1860, m. 1882 Robt. A. McIntyre, son of Col. Robert Chas. McIntyre of S.C. (and several children d. inf.) Issue:

8-1 Albert Gallatin, b. d. inf.

8-2 Louisa Murdock, b. m.

8-3 Elizabeth Carter, b.

8-4 Robert Charles, b. m.

8-5 Agnes Conway, b. m. Ludlow Clark.

6-17 Benjamin Franklin Smith, C.S.A., b. 1835, m. 1857, Harriet Gordon of Culpeper. Issue:

7-1 Gordon, b. 1858, m. Sarah A. Smith, dau. of Henry and Frances (Foote) Smith. Issue:

8-1 Gertrude.

7-2 Eustace Parker Smith, b. 1860, unm.

7-3 James Sydney Smith, b. 1866, m. Claudia White of Norfolk, Va. Studied law at the University of Va. and practiced in Norfolk; d. circ. 1940. Issue:

8-1 James Sydney & 8-2 Richard, both lawyers, practiced in Norfolk, Va.

7-4 Benjamine Lee Smith, b. 1868, d. unm.

7-5 Edwin Percy, b. 1872, killed in accident.

6-18 Isaac Eustace, C.S.A., b. 1837, d. 1874; served in the "Black Horse Cavalry," m. 1866 Agnes Eustace Blackwell, dau. of James and Elizabeth (Carter) Blackwell. Issue, son, d. inf.

6-19 Thomas Smith, d. inf.

## 18. STEPTOE

1-1 Sir **Philip Steptoe** of England is the first of the family we have a record of, and his third son.

2-3 **Anthony Steptoe** was born in Middlesex Co. Eng. 1653 and d. Lancaster Co., Va. 1709. He came from Cudrig, Eng. 1676, and was living in Lancaster Co. 1697. He m. Lucy Stephen in Eng. where she died. Issue:

- 3-1 John, of whom later.
- 3-2 Judith, b. 1675, m. **Richard Lee** of North'd. Co., Va., son of Hon. Hancock and Mary (Kendall) Lee, and had issue (See Lee lineage).
- 3-1 **John Steptoe**, of Lancaster Co., Va., b. in Eng. 1673 and d. in Va. later than Jan. 5, 1720, as his will bears that date. He married about 1705 Elizabeth ———— Eustace, widow of John Eustace. Issue:
- 4-1 William of North'd. Co., b. 1706, d. 1756, m. Ann ———— and had issue:
- 1—William. 2—Mary.
- 4-2 John of North'd. Co., b. 1709, m. 1727 Joanna Lawson, dau. of John Lawson of Lancaster Co., Va.
- 4-3 James, b. 1710, of whom later.
- 4-4 **Elizabeth**, b. 1713, m. Hon. Samuel Blackwell of Walnut Farm (Lodge), North'd. Co., Va., son of Hon. Samuel and Margery (**Downing-Hudnall**) Blackwell, and had issue (See Blackwell-Downing lineage).
- 4-5 **Lucy Steptoe**, b. 1716, m. 1739, **Col. Joseph Blackwell** of Fauq. Co., son of Hon. Samuel and Margery (Downing-Hudnall) Blackwell (see Blackwell-Downing lineage).
- 4-3 Col. James Steptoe of Homany Hall Westmoreland Co., b. 1710, d. 1778, a staunch supporter of the Established Church, and vestryman of Cople Parish, a much beloved physician and influential citizen. m. (1st) Hannah Ashton, (2nd) about 1745, Elizabeth (Eskridge) Aylett, widow of Col. Wm. Aylett and dau. of Col. George and Margaret (Bonum) Eskridge of "Sandy Point," and their issue were:
- 5-1 Elizabeth, m. (1st) Hon. Philip Ludwell Lee of Stratford and Westmoreland Co., son of Hon. Thomas and Hannah (Ludwell) Lee of Stratford. (2nd) Philip Rich'd. Kendall of Alex., Va., who m. (2nd) Mary Lee, and had issue.
- 5-2 Anne m. (1st) Willoughby Allerton, son of Col. Isaac and Elizabeth (Willoughby) Allerton; (2nd) Col. Sam'l. Washington of Hanwoode, Berkley Co.,

W. Va., son of Augustus and Mary (Ball) Washington of Bridges Creek, and had issue.

5-3 George, b. 1748, was a student at the University of Edinburg in 1770, and of the Committee of Safety, Westmoreland Co., Va., 1775.

5-4 James, b. 1750 in Westmoreland Co., and d. Va. 1826 in Bedford Co., was educated at Wm. & Mary Col. and in 1777 was appointed Clerk of the Dist. Court of New London, Bedford Co. Was Clerk of the County Court 1772 to 1826. He was a zealous supporter of the Episcopal Church and m. Frances Calloway, dau. of Col. James Calloway of Bedford Co. Issue:

6-1 James Calloway—Clerk Circuit Court, 1809-1827. 2—William. 3—George. 4—Robert. 5—Thomas. 6—Elizabeth Prentiss. 7—Frances. 8—Sallie. 9—Lucy.

5-5 Thomas, b. 1752, d. unm.

5-6 William, b. 1753, became master of "Hewich Hall," Middlesex Co., Va. by his marriage 1782 to Elizabeth Robinson, dau. of Christopher and Sarah (Wormley) Robinson of "Hewich." They had issue as follows:

6-1 Elizabeth, m. Wm. Christian, and had issue: 1—Thomas Ludwell Lee. 2—James Robinson. 3—George N., M.D. Middlesex. 4—Mary, m. Brent, and had issue. 5—Martha. 6—Sallie, m. Philip Grymes, and had issue.

Arms, Azure, a fleur-de-lis argent.

Crest—Out of a Ducal Coronet, or an elk's head sable.

Motto—Spes mea in Deo (My hope is in God).

## 19. STEWART or STUART

The Stewarts or Stuarts, from whom the Virginia Stewarts are descended are of ancient lineage and have exercised a great influence over the history of the Anglo-Saxon race since the days of Kenneth II,

who conquered the Picts and was crowned King of Scotland, A.D. 854.

King Edward VII of England claimed his right to the British Crown through his Stuart blood and this is a matter of fact. The name was originally Stewart; but Mary Queen of the Scots was educated in France and as there is no "W" in the French alphabet, she changed the spelling to Stuart.

1. Rev. David Stuart of St. Paul's Parish, King George Co., Va., b. in the 17th century at Ivernish in Scotland, d. 1749 in Virginia; was descended from the Royal House of Stuart. His mother was Lucy Erskine, dau. of David Erskine, Lord Dunn. David was an adherent of his cousin James Francis Stuart "The Pretender" and had to flee from Scotland and came to the Colonies in 1715; but returned to England later to be ordained. He settled on the Potomac River and was made Rector of St. Paul's Parish in Stafford County where he served until his death in 1749. He m. Jane Gibbons, dau. of Sir John Gibbons, Governor of Barbadoes; issue:

2-1 William Stuart, b. circ. 1723-24, d. 1796, m. Nov. 26, 1750 Sarah Foote, heiress to fine estate, Cedar Grove, on the Potomac River in King George County. He studied theology in England; was ordained by Bishop Edmonds in 1745; was assistant to his father and succeeded him as Rector in St. Paul's Parish. He was a man of very high character, noted for his eloquence and popularity; was known as "Parson Stuart" and was greatly beloved. His issue were:

3-1 David and six others.

3-1 David Stuart, b. Aug. 3, 1753, m. 1783 Eleanor (Calvert) Custis, b. 1758, d. 1811. He was a graduate of William & Mary College and graduated from the Edinburg Medical College in Scotland and studied in France. He practiced medicine in Alexandria, Va.; was a staunch supporter of the Episcopal Church; served with distinction in the House of Burgesses, Virginia.

2-2 Mary Stuart, b. Feb. 14, 1726; m. (1st) Sigismunda Massie of King George Co., Va., (2nd) Horatio Dade of King George Co., Va., son of Hon. Townshend and Elizabeth (Alexander) Dade of Stafford Co., Virginia; issue by 1st mar.

3-1 **Sigismunda Mary Massie**, d. Apr. 18, 1832, m. 1765 Col. Wm. Alexander of Effingham, Prince William Co., Va., son of Capt. Philip Alexander and Sarah (Hooe) Alexander of King George Co., Va. Had issue:

4-1 John Stuart Alexander, b. 1766, m. Catherine Foote; had issue.

4-2 **Sarah Alexander**, b. Nov. 22, 1767, d. 1804, m. 1783 (3-1) William Hayward Foote; had (4-7) Richard Foote m. Frances Grayson; had (5-4) Sarah Alexander Foote, m. M. C. Blackwell. See Foote and Blackwell lineage.

### FAMILY STORIES, JOKES AND NARRATIVES

Cold facts and figures in recounting ancestry and genealogy are often very dry and uninteresting reading and often need something of the lighter vein to keep up ones interest. I often call to mind humorous occurrences and incidents that happened in the family that give me no end of amusement and enjoyment, and I will try to enumerate a few of them to pass on so that others may enjoy them.

My father, Moore Carter Blackwell, used to cause a great deal of amusement in the neighborhood by some of his peculiarities. He had a powerful voice and could reach the hands on the farm of two-hundred acres wherever they might be. Our cousin, Enoch Jeffries, who lived about a mile away, never failed to ask my brother Lucian and myself when he met us "What was Moore hollowing about this morning?" Our next door neighbor, Maj. John Scott the Commonwealth Attorney, used to call him "the roaring



lion." The Scotts, who lived at Edmonium, which they called "Loretta," were our closest neighbors and their oldest daughter Miss Lizzie was a beautiful lady. Frank and Jim were about Brother Jim's age and Jack and his cousin Bernard nearer Lucian's and mine Mary was a very pretty little girl a few years younger than I and we called her "Scotty." She was my first sweetheart.

Father believed in getting Lucian and me up early in the morning. Our room was above his, and he would call us about 5 o'clock winter mornings. We would throw our feet out the side of the bed and shuffle them on the floor awhile, then lie down again. In a little while he would call again, and we would shuffle our feet some more and we would keep this up until he would begin to get mad, then we would dress in a hurry and go down and go to the cook's quarters, which adjoined the kitchen, and sit by the fire there with her boys Johnny and Sam for an hour or so till daylight, when he could get out and do our chores. Father was very methodical. He had two razors, and would shave one side of his face with one and the other side with the other. Each pair of his socks was numbered and he wore them in succession. If number four had a hole in it when its turn came, he would not put on number five, but wait for mother or one of the girls to darn number four for him.

Father, being an elderly man, thought he was privileged to say what he pleased to the younger men. One day he met a Mr. Belt, who had married Emma Horner a relative of ours, in Warrenton, and said to him "Belt, I saw your daughter, Kitty, on the street today and she is a blame pretty girl. Belt," he said, "I have often wondered how such a blame ugly man as you could have such a pretty daughter" (thinking Belt would take it good-naturedly and probably say "She takes after her mother.") But Belt did not take it that way at all. He bristled up at once and said, "You ain't so damn pretty yourself." Well,

father was outraged. He came home and said, "Belt was a fool to take exceptions to what I said after complimenting his daughter so."

Father used to call Mother the "Old Lady" and would brag about her looks and tell all the girls in the neighborhood that none of them were as good looking as his "Old Lady" was when she was young and "blame" few of them were as good looking now.

Father was kind to us; but very strict and we often thought he was harsh. Mother was just the opposite with us, and was very loving, kind and lenient, and we just loved her; but she could be firm when she thought it necessary. When the girls got old enough she would make them take turns at keeping house and running things to get experience, and later on in her life, she turned over everything to them to run, only giving advice when asked. Father became very deaf toward the end, and Sister Bessie, who gave her life to Mother and Father to the end, used to upbraid him at times for things that he should not have done, and he would look at her and smile and say "I don't hear a blame word you say." Father was a handsome man, and he knew it. He used to tell a story about meeting Captain Ben Mountjoy, one of the Mosbys Rangers, in Warrenton during the Civil War. Ben had on a brand new Confederate uniform and was going to have his daguerreotype taken to send to his best girl. Father said to him, "Ben, if you will lend me your coat and let me have my picture taken and send it to her for yours, that will 'fetch' her." Ben had his picture taken and then loaned Father his coat to have his picture taken and I still have that daguerreotype.

Cousin Eustace Jeffries lived about a mile from us and every one in the neighborhood and all the students at Bethel Military Academy called him "Cousin Eus." He kept a good deal of stock on his farm and had some fine horses. His nephew, James Jeffries, had just started practicing law in Warrenton, and wanted to buy a horse. Cousin Eus said he would

sell him one for \$200. Jim said it was too much, that \$150 was enough. Cousin Eus said, "You fool you, what do you want to buy a horse for, I'll let you use him as long as you want." So Jim kept the horse and used it. Shortly after, Cousin Eus was sitting at Bethel Store with some of his cronies and Father asked if he had sold the horse. He said no and looked up the road and saw Jim coming down the road on the horse. He said, "There comes that rascal now. I'll get behind the store and hear what lie he has to tell." Jim came with the horse prancing and Father asked "Have you bought the horse, Jim?" He said, "Yes." "How much did you give for him?" "That's telling," said Jim. "What is he worth?" "Every cent of \$300," said Jim and he talked on—and after he had told all the lies he could about the horse, Cousin Eus came from behind the store and said, "Well, I say Jim, I reckon you'll make a right good lawyer, you are such a liar." "Uncle Eus", said Jim, "that's a damn mean trick." "Go long, you rascal you, I say I reckon you'll make a right good lawyer you are such a liar. I reckon you'll give me \$200 for the horse."

Cousin Eus and his older brother, Cousin Joe, lived near Bethel Academy and their house was a kind of rendezvous for their friends and relatives from the upper and lower parts of the County. Among them was an eccentric character from Stafford, John Moncure, who was a fruit tree agent and stopped with them quite often. He liked to use big words in his conversation. On one occasion he met an old gentleman he had not seen for a long time and was very profuse in his greeting. He finally apologized by saying, "Sir, you must pardon my school girl gush; but meeting with the old landmarks as I perambulate through the country produces a degree of felicity in my constitution which it is impossible for me to suppress, Sir." On another occasion, in telling about a fuss he had with a negro, he said, "I was just about to horizontalize the perpendicularity of the unbleached American citi-

zen.”—In other words, to knock the negro down. One of the professors at the Academy had heard about his peculiarities, and when he met him he used about a dozen of the biggest words he could think of. John was delighted, and said, “I perceive, Sir, from your conversation, that you have been domiciled in the habitation of education.” When asked to have something more to eat and he did not want it, he would say, “No, I thank you, Madam, I’ve had a most elegant sufficiency, anything more would be a superfluous redundancy.”

Cousin James De Ruyter Blackwell graduated from Dickinson and Randolph Macon Colleges, was well educated and was known as the “Professor,” but was impractical, eccentric, and had not much common sense. He was generally complaining about his health and Father used to say he had the “hypo.” He and his father-in-law, Capt. Elias Edmonds III, had very poor opinions of each other. Cousin Jim used to say, “I don’t see how the Deity with all His wisdom and omnipotence could have created a man like the old Captain.” The old Captain used to come back in his deep base voice and say, “Gawd-a-Mighty had mighty little to do when he made Jimmy.”

Uncle Albert Gallatin Smith (known as “A. G.”) used to tell this joke on Cousin James who was usually complaining. He was walking along the road one day just as Dave Gray, a tenant boy, ploughing corn, came up to the fence, and said, “Good morning, Confessor, how are you this morning, Confessor?” “Oh Dave, I’m poorly.” “What’s the matter Confessor?” “Oh Dave, I don’t know, just look at my tongue.” He poked his tongue through the fence and said, “What do you think of that tongue?” Dave said, “Well, Confessor, if I had that thar tongue in my head I’d go to bed and stay thar.”

Uncle Albert and Cousin James frequently made jibes at each other. Uncle Albert had a little black and tan terrier that took a dislike to Cousin James,

and one day bit him on the leg. Uncle Albert said to Cousin James, "I always thought you were a gentleman; but I never knew that dog to bite a gentleman before." Cousin James came right back to him, "He bit me behind."

I remember Uncle Albert's admonition to us boys. He used to say, "Boys, don't you imagine for one instant that the man who takes the biggest 'chaw' of tobacco, smokes the biggest cigar or the "stinkiest" pipe, drinks the most whiskey or cusses the loudest, is the biggest man." I have often wondered why as youngsters we used to admire the bully. When I was a small boy it used to be my ambition to be able to "chaw" tobacco and spit "ambier" (tobacco juice) like Mrs. Thad Gray, the wife of a tenant on our place. She had one front tooth out and she used to open her lips and squirt "ambier" through that hole, and it seemed to me she could hit a fly in the eye ten feet away every time. I was willing to have a tooth knocked out if I could spit that way. There were two instances in my life which put me against tobacco, and I have never used it. One Christmas day, father had several of his old cronies to dinner. They were sitting around the fireplace in the parlor "chawing Nigger foot" tobacco, smoking corn cob pipes, spitting ambier into the fire, cracking jokes and telling yarns. Cousin Sandy Edmonds took out a plug of black strap tobacco, cut off about two square inches, and put it in his mouth. He saw me watching him, so he cut off a little three cornered piece and poked it at me saying, "Chaw that, boy, it will make a man of you." I "chawed" it, but I did not eat any Christmas dinner that day. Another time at school, one of the boys dared me to smoke a cigarette. I smoked it; but was unable to attend the class of physiology that afternoon. On examination we had the question of circulation of the blood which was explained thoroughly the day I missed. I got everything right except the circulation in the heart muscle itself which I overlooked. That set

me back two points and I failed by one point of getting the medal. I was old enough then to reason some, and remembering Uncle Albert's admonition and the Christmas dinner and medal I had lost, I concluded that the use of **anything** that could knock you out like that was bad business.

Bethel Military Academy, situated four miles from Warrenton, Fauquier Co., Va. on the road to Marshall, Va., was organized by my Uncle, Major Albert Galatin Smith, C.S.A., shortly after the Civil War. It consisted of two log cabins which he converted into school rooms to accomodate the boys and girls of the neighborhood; but later boys only were admitted. Brother Jim and my older sisters Bessie, Fannie and Mollic, went to Bethel and had to walk the mile and a half that it was from home. One very rainy day when they were coming back along the muddy road, sister Fannie had gotten on horseback behind a student that rode to school. Another student who was rather "sweet on" sister Bessie wanted her to ride behind him; but she refused, and trudged along in the mud when another student by the name of Gough came up and said to her, "Betsy, you better had a rid"—and that was a by-word in the school for a long time: "Betsy, you better had a rid."

I often think of the hardships we had to undergo in those days to get an education. My younger brother, Lucian, and I had to milk from six to eight cows every morning and then walk three miles to school, rain, snow or shine—and get back in the evening, milk the cows, chop and bring in the wood for the next day. Until we were old enough or knew enough to go to Bethel Military Academy, which was 1½ miles away, we went to Evergreen public school, three miles away, taught by Cousin Blackwell Smith. He was rather old and believed in "no lickin, no larnin," and there never was a day that two or three of us did not get licked, and often every one of us boys got licked, and I reckon we deserved it. He kept a bramble briar

with one end curved in a loop for a handle hanging up back of his desk and he was an adept at handling that bramble briar. He lived about 200 yards away and used to go to lunch every day. One day, after he had left, we were standing around the stove and one fellow went to patting on the stove pipe. We got to dancing and made quite a racket. All at once the door opened and the old man burst in on us. About a dozen of the boys ran into a little closet about 4 by 6 feet under the steps. The old man took his seat in his chair against the door, sent for his lunch, and kept us there all the recess and some of us were nearly suffocated before we got out. He never exactly swore; but his favorite expression was "Burn your soul." We were all fond of the old man, although he licked us.

Students from afar came to Bethel Academy and at first had to be boarded by people in the neighborhood; but dormitories were built and two large buildings for assembly halls and class rooms, and a large pavilion for a gymnasium and for battalion drills in bad weather. The school prospered, and at one time had about 200 students.

The people of the neighborhood and Warrenton were very hospitable to the students and many friendships were formed between the students and the young ladies which often ripened into love, and many of the students returned in after years and married girls they had met while there. It used to be the boast of Uncle Albert that he had furnished husbands to nearly all the girls of the neighborhood and Warrenton. There were two literary societies, the Washington and Lee, and each one gave a gold medal every year to the best orator, the best debater, the best essayist and the best declaimer. I was considered a good declaimer; but there was always a better one, so I never got the medal, and indigust, I tried for the orator's and failed, and then the essayist, which I won. A favorite speech for declamation by the students was "The Suposed Speech of John Adams in Favor of the Declaration of

Independence" by Daniel Webster. I never read this speech; but learned it by heart from hearing others recite it and remember it to this day.

Col. C. E. Lightfoot, C.S.A., was Commandant of Cadets and one of the Professors at Bethel Military Academy. He had command of the defences of Richmond for awhile during the Civil War. He was a strict disciplinarian, a fluent speaker of French and a very fine mathematician; but rather impractical in other respects. He occupied a stone house called "Meadow View" owned by my father about a quarter of a mile from the school and from "The Meadows," the home of my grandfather, James Blackwell. The rent from this house enabled my father to pay the tuition of my older brother James and me and my younger brother, Lucian at the Academy. The Colonel's oldest daughter, Miss Laura, was very popular with the Cadets and played the organ at the Methodist Church at the Academy. She was a great admirer of her father's intellectual attainments and one day was talking to a tenant on the place, Mr. William Gray, who had been an adherent of the Blackwell family for many years. She asked him if he did not think her father a very smart man. He replied, "Well, Miss Laura, for booklearning and such things, I reckon the Colonel is right smart; but for common sense, he's a damn sight bigger fool than Jim Rooter. (James de Ruyter Blackwell) The Colonel's two sons, Chapin and James, were students at the Academy and were officers in the battalion and were very active in athletics. Chapin died many years ago. James became a patent lawyer and a Supervisor in the Patent Office, Washington, D. C. He was a very close friend of mine until he died in 1942.

As an example of Colonel Lightfoot's discipline, on one April 1st, the boys the night before, had played a lot of pranks, taken gates and doors off their hinges, moved desks from the rooms, put obstructions across the roads and walks in the grounds and turned things



topsey-turvey in general. When school opened the next morning, he ordered the captains of the two companies of Cadets to form their companies on the parade ground. He then issued orders to the captains to divide their companies into squads under lieutenants and sergeants and to get all the missing paraphernalia that they had removed and replace it and when they were done to report to him and he would inspect their work to see if it was properly done. We went to work and got everything in place by noon and went to dinner. School was opened right after dinner and kept in until supper. After supper we went back to school and remained until we had finished our lessons for the day about 9 o'clock at night. Needless to say we did not play the same pranks the next year.

My grandfather, James Blackwell, died during the Civil War and my grandmother carried on at the Meadows after him. She had a lot of business sense and had a faithful old servant, Uncle Shem, who stayed with her and ran the farm. The Meadows adjoined the Academy grounds and she generally had eight or ten of the students as boarders. After her death in 1877, her daughter, Lucy Steptoe (Aunt Lou) carried on and my oldest Sister, Bessie, stayed with her a great deal. About 1880, Aunt Lou married Alexander Fontaine Rose. They had three sons, James, Dabney and John. James became a Civil Engineer and helped build the Canadian Pacific Railroad. Dabney enlisted in the Army about the same time that John went to West Point and he said to John, "I'll get a commission before you do," and sure enough he was commissioned a second lieutenant shortly before John graduated.

They tell a story on John that when they were hazing him at West Point, they asked him, "What's your name?" "Rose, Sir". "What kind of a rose?" "An American Beauty, Sir." "You'll do, they said. John went into the Engineer Corps and rose to Brigadier General.

Dabney remained in the Army until after World

War I. He was a fine disciplinarian and knew how to handle men. He was on the Mexican Border during the War training regiments for over seas duty, hoping to go over himself. He trained regiment after regiment and was not sent over, so he became disgusted and resigned after the War and went to Florida to live. To show how the men appreciated him, one of the regiments he trained wanted to give him a handsome gold watch; but as the regulations forbade it, they presented it to his mother for him.

Their father, Alexander Fontaine Rose, was quite young, but was a scout during the Civil War. He had a very large nose and used to tell the story on himself. He was scouting with an older man below Fredericksburg and ran into some Federal soldiers and turned and ran on fast as they could. They were shot at and one bullet came close to his nose and he thought he had been hit. When they had got away, he said to his companion, "They shot my nose off;" the man said, "Let me see. I don't know how much you had; but you got a piece there now as big as my shoe."

Uncle Rose was very popular with the Confederate Veterans. He attended all of their annual reunions and was a great entertainer and would always sing and dance "The Veterans Parade" which he said was written by a one-armed Veteran who had never been able to attend a reunion; but once a friend gave him money to pay his expenses and he was so overjoyed that he went to sleep and dreamed the poem and got up and sang it the next morning to the tune of "I've Gwine Back to Dixie." I have always believed that Uncle Rose wrote it himself.

### **"THE VETERAN'S PARADE"**

Get my old napsack, Mary and my uniform of gray  
Get my battered helmet for I'll need them all today  
Get my old canteen and leggins, reach me down my  
rusty gun  
I'm just going out parading with the Boys of '61.

**Chorus**

I'm going back to Dixie, I'm going out parading  
I'm going where the orange blossoms grow.  
For I hear the old Boys calling as one by one they're  
falling  
My heart's turned back to Dixie and I must go.

Never mind those blood-stains, Mary, never mind that  
jagged hole.  
They were left there by a bullet that was seeking for  
my soul.  
Brush off those cob webs, Mary, get the bonny flag of  
blue  
I'm just going out parading with the Boys of '62.

These clothes don't fit me, Mary, like they did when  
I was young  
Don't you recollect how neatly to my manly form  
they clung.  
Never mind that sleeve that's empty, let it dangle  
loose and free,  
I'm just going out parading with the Boys of '63.

Pull my sword belt tighter, Mary, fix that strap be-  
neath my chin.  
I'm old and threadbare, Mary, like my uniform, I'm  
thin.  
But I reckon I'll pass muster as I did in days of yore.  
I'm just going out parading with the Boys of '64.

Now I'm ready, Mary, kiss your old sweetheart good-  
bye.  
Wipe away those tear drops, Lord, I didn't think  
you'd cry.  
For I ain't going out to battle; cheer up, Mary, sakes  
alive!  
I'm just going out parading with the Boys of '65.

They used to tell a story on grandfather, James Blackwell. A man came to the neighborhood to start a dancing class and as the people of the neighborhood (mostly Blackwells and Smiths) were generally "shouting Methodists, dyed in the wool," there was great opposition to it. He wanted Aunt Lou, grandfather's daughter, to join it and grandfather was in favor of it. When the neighbors would come to protest against it, he would say, "Let Lucy dance if she wants. If she goes to the Devil, she will know how to skip over the hot coals all the better." He was not much of a churchman; but he always contributed toward it and gave the ground on which Bethel Methodist Church was built in 1836. My Brother James made the plans for remodeling it in 1886, and Dr. Thomas W. Smith was very active in superintending and seeing that the work was completed. The 100th anniversary of its foundation was celebrated in 1936.

My father was a Captain in the Quartermaster Corps of the Confederate Army and followed the fortunes of the Army of Northern Virginia from Bull Run to Appomattox. Uncle Joe was quite a large man and past the age for service in the Army so he never served in the regular army. They both lived in upper Fauquier County near Delaplane, then called Piedmont, on the Manassas branch of the railroad. Col. John S. Mosby with his Rangers had his headquarters in the neighborhood and Uncle Joe acted as his Chief of Staff, kept records for him and gathered information of the movement of the Federals. Mosby's Chief hangout was at St. Bernard, the home of the Buckners, near Delaplane and his family stayed there a good deal of the time. The Federals often tried to surprise and capture him there but they never succeeded. Whenever he went there he always had watchmen out in all directions to warn him of the approach of the Yankees. When they reported their approach, he would go to an old icehouse in a deep hollow down in the woods. Leaves had filled the hollow and entirely



Col. John Singleton Mosby, CSA. A great friend of father and brother Jim.



covered the icehouse. The Colonel would burrow into the leaves and get into the ice house and remain there until the Yankees left and they never found out his hiding place. General Custar captured seven of Mosby's men, shot four and hung three. Mosby captured a great many Yankees; but waited until he captured some of Custar's men. Then he put a lot of bullets into a cap and nicked seven of them and had the men to draw lots and those that drew the nicked bullets were shot or hung on a black oak tree near Front Royal and a note was pinned on them informing Custar that the next time he hung any of Mosby's men he, Mosby, would hang ten for one. No more of Mosby's men were hung.

Col. John S. Mosby was a great friend of Father and Uncle Joe. He was very fond of buttermilk and used to come out from Warrenton to our home at Sunny Side three miles away and sit in the shade of the trees, drink buttermilk and swap yarns of the Civil War with Father and Uncle Joe. One day Uncle Joe sent "old Kale," a negro servant, with a note to Mother, who could not read it, so she told Kale to go back and tell him to send her word what he wanted as she could not read his writing. Kale said, "Well, I kin tell you what he wants; he wants de Jimmy-John to fill wid buttermilk to send Cunnel Mosby." Kale's lower lip hung down over his chin and we boys used to laugh at him and say he could not walk up hill without stepping on it. I can remember seeing Kale eating salt her-ring—bones and all.

Col. Mosby used to tell a story about General Lee and General Stuart. He was very fond of General Stuart and named one of his daughters, Stuart, after the General. He was at General Lee's Headquarters one day while Gen. Stuart was there. Gen. Lee never swore while Stuart was a very eloquent and fluent "cusser." He did not shock you with his cussing; but rather interested and amused you. General Lee was reprimanding his orderly rather mildly. Stuart stood

it as long as he could and finally said, "Aw, General, let me 'cuss' him for you." The Colonel was rather abrupt in his manners and some people accused him of having bad manners. He was talking to a young lady one day and asked her if she thought he had bad manners. She replied, "Why, Colonel, you have no manners at all."

At the second Battle of Bull Run, Jackson had marched his army through Manassas Gap in the Blue Ridge Mountains and gotten in the rear of the Federal Army between it and Washington, and bore the brunt of that battle until Gen. Lee with his Army came up from the South. It was then that Gen. Pope telegraphed President Lincoln that he would "bag Jackson before night" and he came very near doing it. Few people know the inside story of how Jackson came so near to being overwhelmed. He had been ordered by Gen. Lee to get between Pope and Washington and Lee was to come up from the South and catch Pope between the two armies. Jackson got to his position ahead of time and had to hold the whole Federal Army in check until Lee, who was a little late came up. His ammunition was getting short and in one section of his line along the railroad cut, it had entirely given out and the men had to repel the Federals with round niggerhead stones which were plentiful in the cut. Gen. Hood had been ordered to follow and support Jackson with his brigade. As he came through Thorofare Gap, he was met by a scout in Confederate uniform who told him that Jackson had gone to Warrenton and was being attacked there and to go to his support there at once. Hood thought that was a mistake as he had been ordered to join Jackson at Manassas; but the scout insisted that was the order from Jackson. The scout was riding a fine horse; had on a nice uniform and in his knapsack he had all sorts of canned delicacies only found in the Federal supplies. They asked him how he came by all these things. He said, it was a poor scout who could not keep himself



supplied from Yankees Sutler wagons. They striped him, took off his boots and found under the insoles, papers which proved undoubtedly that he was a spy. They held a drum-head courtmartial right there, condemned him; put him on a horse, a halter around his neck, tied it over a limb of a tree, gave the horse a slap and left him hanging there. Hood had lost about two hours, so he pushed on and by forced marches arrived in time to save Jackson from defeat as his ammunition was almost exhausted and he would have had to retreat. Lee, coming up about the same time, Pope's Army was caught between the two and routed. The scout that met Hood belonged to an organization formed by Mrs. Jessie Fremont, wife of General John C. Fremont, known in northern Virginia as the "Jessie Scouts." They were picked, dare devil men, finely equipped with the best of arms and horses and in Confederate uniform. They operated between the Confederate and Federal lines and supplied the Federals with information as to the Confederate movements. They took desperate chances as they knew that no quarter would be given them if captured.

Many were the hardships that Southern women had to undergo during the Civil War and especially in Fauquier, Loudon, Prince William and Fairfax, which was the area in which Mosby and his Partisan Rangers operated. As the Yankees could not catch Mosby, in many instances, they took it out on the inhabitants of the area in which he operated. But as a general thing, the Federals were considerate of the women and children in the area. My mother used to tell us stories of the War; but I have forgotten the most of them. I remember her telling of how she saved father's broadcloth suit which was a rarity in those days by stuffing it in the pipe of the kitchen stove.

The most difficult thing was to get something to eat and mother said that for weeks at a time they had nothing much to eat but potatoes. One winter she said she did not know how they would have gotten

through except for a Federal soldier who was stationed at her home as a guard and protection and he shared his rations with them of which he had an abundance.

A very amusing story is told of Cousin Betty Hunton who lived in Fauquier County near New Baltimore. The Colonel who commanded in that district had made her house his headquarters. The Federals had taken all the stock off the place except a cow and an old gray mare which was lame. One morning her colored man came and told her the Yankees had taken the old gray mare. She went to see the Colonel in the parlor and told him the mare was lame and no use to him and was the only thing she had to send corn to the mill for meal and wouldn't he let her keep it. The Colonel pushed a paper toward her and said, "Sign that and you can keep the mare." It was the oath of allegiance to the United States. She read it and handed it back to him, put her arms akimbo, drew herself up to her full height and said, "Sir, the gray mare is yours." The Colonel's aide who was present, drew a picture of her on the wall in that attitude and wrote under it, "Sir, the gray mare is yours." He let her keep the gray mare and that picture is still preserved on the wall.

I would be very remiss if I did not pay my respects to the negroes of our community, most of whom were former slaves or their children. Most of them remained faithful to their "folks" and carried on during and after the War. Uncle Shem Butler was a most trusted servant of my grandfather, James Blackwell, and he remained and ran the farm for my grandmother until his death which occurred shortly after hers. We called all the older darkies, Uncle or Aunt, and as youngsters used to play with the negro children as if they were white. I well remember Uncle Tom and Aunt Maria Lucas and their boys, Jeff, Johnny, and Sam our playmates. Then there was Uncle Jerry and Aunt Kitty Barbor; Uncle Jerry came up from South Carolina after the War. He said

he was brought from Africa as a slave. I remember he used to take a long time to eat and father used to try to hurry him by saying, "Old man, feed that hole in your face and swallow now and chew as you go along." Their daughter Mary used to wait on the table. One day we had company for dinner, soup had been served and we were waiting for the chicken, when Mary came in and announced, "De rooster ain't done yit." Another couple were Uncle Wash and Aunt Harriet Settle. Uncle Wash used to like to fish in Cedar Run on Sundays. Aunt Harriet would scold him; but she would fry the fish. One time they had a big baptizing and started in Mr. Joe Honer's ice pond in the suburbs of Warrenton. When he got wind of it, he ran down there and waving a big stick, told them to get out of there washing their dirty hides in his pond—he wanted to cut ice off of it next winter. They went to Cedar Run about a half a mile away.

A very notorious negro, Green Pinkard, was going to be baptized, Aunt Harriet went to the preacher and said, "Brer Jones, fer Gawd sake don't baptize Green Pinkard in Cedar Run fer his sins is so pizin, dey'll kill evry fish in Cedar Run." She thought his sins would literally be washed away.

Another interesting character was Belle Myner, a girl about 18, black as the ace of spades; but she had a great imagination and could make up and tell marvelous ghost and other stories to amuse and scare us children. I remember a doggerel she used to repeat about the older children of our family.

Little Jimmy Eustis, playing wid de roosters,

Bessie Moe, diggin wid de hoe.

Fanny Grayson, kickin up and pacin!

Molly Jeems sewing up de seams.

Another character was Peter Anderson. Pete used to say, "De Devil, he ain't no roughneck; he's er smart edgercated gentlerman; he's gradgerated from all de newniversitys and colledges in de Newnited States; de only way he can't fool you is when he stick out his

foot; he got a club foot and he keep dat foot back." On one occasion father sent his wagon to move an old servant's furniture and the wagon came near turning over. Some one said to her, "Aunt Clarkey, you came near turning over." She said, "Yes, honey, but de Lawd was wid me fer if de Lawd hadn't been wid me, we'd turned over right dar on de hill side and broke de jug and spilt all er my wine."

Then there were Agnes and Jim Washington who lived with us a long time. They were the children of Peggy, a slave of Father's who was so incorrigible as a girl that she had to be sold and was carried to Mississippi, but got back to Virginia after the war with the two children. She married Fielding Walker, a negro of considerable prominence among the negroes of Fauquier. Jim enlisted in the Army and became a Sergeant. He was retired and was of great assistance in getting negroes around Warrenton to enlist for the World War I.

Then there was Cato Butler who lived with Father and Mother and ran the farm and waited on them until they moved to Warrenton and Father died. One of my nieces was talking to Cato one day about a neighbor who was not very energetic. She said he had to work so hard. Cato replied "Mr. McClung work? Why, Mr. McClung and work done fell out long ago and dey ain't never goin to make up no more."

Frank Young was another faithful servant. I once heard Father talking to him. He said, "Frank, Uncle Billy Pin says he can tell what the weather is going to be by his two pigs. When it is going to be fair, their tails are curled up on their backs, when it is going to rain, they hang limp." Frank said, "I spec he dreamed dat."

BOOK TWO

MEMOIRS OF

EDWARD MAURICE BLACKWELL



# CONTENTS

iii

Chapters	Page
1 Early Life as Boy, School Teacher and Medical Student. ....	1
2 Practice of Medicine, and Life at Riverton, Virginia. ....	6
3 I Build a House and Get Married. ....	15
4 I Join the Navy for the Spanish American War. ....	18
5 The Cruise of the U. S. S. Abarenda to Samoa. ....	23
6 Life in the Samoan Islands. ....	28
7 We Visit Auckland, New Zealand. ....	35
8 Hoisting the German Flag and the American Flag over the Samoan Islands. ....	38
9 Governing the Samoans. ....	41
10 Tri-Partite Government of Samoa by the United States, England and Germany. ....	46
11 We Revisit New Zealand and Return to Pago-Pago. ....	48
12 I Am Detached From the Abarenda and Ordered Home. ....	50
13 I Am Ordered Back to Samoa As A Witness On A Court Martial. ....	51
14 Cruise of the Castine at Panama. ....	54
15 Cruise of the Castine to Europe and Africa. ....	57
16 Cruise of the Castine to South America. ....	63
17 Duty in the West Indies. ....	67
18 Duty at the Naval Hospital, San Juan. ....	69
19 Duty at the Naval Academy, Annapolis, Maryland. ....	71
20 Cruise on the Hospital Ship Solace. ....	73
21 Duty at the Bureau of Medicine and Surgery, and Second Cruise of Hospital Ship Solace. ....	78
22 Detached from Solace for Operation and Ordered to Bureau of Medicine and Surgery. ....	82
23 Duty in Atlanta, Georgia. ....	84
24 I Retire and We Take a Trip to the West Coast. ....	86
25 We Visit Seattle, San Francisco and Los Angeles. ..	88
26 We Return Home and Commence Building a Home and a Church. ....	91
27 Life in Arlington County, Virginia. ....	96
28 Vacations and Recreations and Societies to Which I Belong, Poems, Etc. ....	100
Appendix .....	110





## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

v

Dr. and Mrs. E. M. Blackwell, taken on wedding tour....Facing page	16
Scenes of Samoa.....	" " 26
Samoa Girls ( <i>Fafine</i> ).....	" " 27
Trial of High Chief Letuli.....	" " 32
Monument to English and Americans, Apia.....	" " 33
Wrecks of Trenton, Vandalia and Nipsic.....	" " 38
Lieut. Richardson, Dr. Blackwell and <i>Fita-Fitas</i> in Seumanatafa's gig.....	" " 39
Chief Seumanatafa saved many lives.....	" " 39
Hoisting U. S. Flag at Pago-Pago, Samoa.....	" " 40
Native Guard ( <i>Fita-Fitas</i> ) Samoa.....	" " 41
Robert Louis Stevenson and Samoans at Vailima.....	" " 46
Stevenson's Tomb top of Mt. Vaka, Samoa.....	" " 47
Officers of U. S. S. Castine.....	" " 54
Cathedral San Domingo, Tomb of Columbus.....	" " 68
Dr. and Mrs. Blackwell in San Juan, P. R.....	" " 69
Drs. Blackwell, Pickrell and Baker, San Juan.....	" " 69
Hospital Ship <i>Solace</i> .....	" " 74
Hoisting and receiving patient on <i>Solace</i> .....	" " 75
Medical Officers of <i>Solace</i> .....	" " 76
Admiral Osterhaus and Medical Officers of Fleet.....	" " 77
Commander Blackwell and Staff of his Division, Bureau M & S.....	" " 78
Medical Officers of <i>Solace</i> , 1917.....	" " 79
Commander E. M. Blackwell, M .C. U. S. Navy, 1917....	" " 80
Mrs. E. M. Blackwell.....	" " 81
St. Mary's Episcopal Church, Arlington.....	" " 93
Commander Blackwell dedicating plaque, Rising Sun Tavern .....	" " 96
Col. Hume decorating General Marshall with the medal of the Cincinnati Society, Rising Sun Tavern.....	" " 97
The "Anchorages", homes of Commander Blackwell.....	" " 100
Commander Blackwell in his "Den".....	" " 101
Commander and Mrs. Blackwell in their parlor at the "Anchorage" .....	" " 102
Survivors of the Hospital Ship <i>Solace</i> .....	" " 103
Bishop Tucker breaking ground, St. Mary's Church.....	" " 110



## Chapter 1

### Early Life

I was born at "Farms View", the home of Moore Fauntleroy Carter, my grand-uncle, a descendant of Robert (King) Carter, in upper Fauquier Co. Virginia, about three miles northeast of Delaplan Station, on the Manassas branch of the Southern Rail Road, which was then known as Piedmont, September 18, 1865. When I was about two years old, the family moved to the "Brick House" near Warrenton, Virginia on the estate of Elias Edmonds III whose home was "Ivy Hill" about a mile distant. We lived there for about two years, when we moved to "Edmonium," my mother's ancestral home, near Warrenton. It was the home of her father Richard Foote who acquired it through his first wife Frances Grayson, the daughter of Wm. Grayson and his wife Octavia Edmonds, the daughter of Elias Edmonds II and his wife Frances Edmonds.

In 1870, when I was five years old, we moved to "Sunny Side" about 200 yards distant. It used to be the slave quarters of the estate; but it had been renovated and fixed up for a dwelling for us. It came to my mother as her share of her father's estate. It consisted of a four room stone house with a large barn and a log cabin for a tenant, a log kitchen in the yard, and 170 acres of land. This was shortly after the Civil War when everyone in the South was impoverished and had little left but the land.

I lived there until I left home at 18 years of age, to teach school, and all my boyhood memories date from that time and place. My sister, Richie, was born at Edmonium and Eva and Mildred at Sunny Side. When they came there were nine children and it was some problem to house all of us in a four room house, feed us and provide for our other wants; but father and mother managed to do it and all of us grew up

healthy and hearty. All of us that were old enough, had some work to do to help the family to get along. When I was 9 years old and my brother Lucian 8, we had to milk from 6 to 8 cows every morning and walk to public school 3 miles away, rain, snow or shine, and chop fire wood and milk the cows when we returned in the afternoon. The older children, James, Bessie, Fannie and Mollie went to school at Bethel, which was conducted by our Uncle, Major Albert Gallatin Smith, C. S. A. Boys and girls attended it until about 1875, when it was changed into a military school, known as Bethel Military Academy where boys only were admitted.

About 1875 the house was remodeled and there was added to it a dining room, kitchen and two bedrooms. This enabled us to take several students from Bethel Military Academy as boarders. My Brother James had gotten a position in the Supervising Architect's Office in Washington, and it was his help that enabled Father to enlarge the house. For two years we had a cousin of ours, Margaret Lomax, as a teacher until Lucian and I got large enough and learned enough to go to public school and Brother Jim was able to send Sister Mollie to a boarding school near Warrenton taught by Miss Laura Bartenstein and her Sister Sarah. Sisters Bessie and Fannie went to school to Cousin Jas. D. Blackwell at Oak Spring after they left Bethel. Lucian and I went to public school 3 years and then to Bethel Military Academy for 4 years until we graduated or "quituated."

It was while going to Bethel that I commenced my hobby of wood carving. I used to pull up dogwood bushes large enough for walking canes, carve their roots into various shapes and sell them to the students for 25 cents apiece. In those days we had no pocket money except what we got by selling rags, bones and old iron at half a cent a pound, so the proceeds from my canes gave me more money than the rest of the boys had.

When I left Bethel Academy in 1884, I taught school in the family of Mr. Channing Smith near Delaplan for two years. His wife, "Cousin Lou," was one of the most lovable characters I ever knew. With his family and girls and boys of the neighborhood, I had from 15 to 20 scholars. From there I went to Temperanceville, Accomac Co., on the Eastern Shore of Virginia as principal of a graded school, and taught there for two years. In the meantime, I had decided to study medicine and was studying under my brother-in-law, Dr. Thomas W. Smith as my preceptor. While teaching at Mr. Smith's Dr. Green was of great help to me, and in Accomac Dr. Brodwater was of great assistance. In 1888 I entered the Medical School of the University of Maryland in Baltimore and graduated from there in 1890 number 15 in a class of 115, of whom 35 failed.

In my vacation in 1888 I sold books to help pay my expenses at college; but did not have much success, but gained considerable experience and had some very amusing experiences. On one occasion I rode up to a farm house in upper Fauquier about noon. The farmer and his farm hands were lying on the grass under the trees waiting for dinner which was being served in the yard. He invited me to have dinner which was a very substantial one, consisting of corn bread, bacon, milk, buttermilk, clabber and vegetables. I was eating rather sparingly when he said, "Young man, you better eat a plenty of this for you ain't going to get no pie." After dinner I started to explain the book I was selling. He listened very attentively until I got through and then he said, "Lord God, young man, I ain't got no time to read no book. I get up before light and feed and curry my horses and get out into the field. I don't get in before dark and by the time I get through supper it's bedtime. The only time I have to read is Sunday, then I read the Hagerstown Almanac and forget it before next Sunday, and read it over agin."

In my vacation in 1889, I clerked in Jeffries Drug Store in Warrenton. After graduation in 1890 I went to Richmond to take the State Board Medical Examination, which I passed successfully. I got there in time for the dedication of the Lee Monument in Monument Square and fell in with my father's regiment and stayed with them in a large room in the court house the first night. I took my first ride on the electric trolley which had just been completed and was the first electric trolley to be operated in the United States.

From Richmond I went to Ashland, Glasgow, Buena Vista, Bedford City, Lynchburg, Roanoke and Salem looking for a place to begin the practice of medicine; but did not find anything to my liking. When I returned home I found that a hail storm the day before had destroyed all the crops in Fauquier and they had to be replanted. I went to Paris in Upper Fauquier to see Dr. Settle, an old friend of my father. He advised me to go to Riverton, Virginia in the fork of the North and South Branches of the Shenandoah River. I went there and was much pleased with the outlook as the country was on a "boom" and all the space between Riverton and Front Royal, the "Twin Cities" about two miles apart, had been laid out in city lots and it bid fair to have 10,000 inhabitants in the near future, but the "boom busted" (an expression they used) and there was little increase.

I engaged a room and board and an office from Mr. Joe Kenner the proprietor of the hotel, the "Kenner House." To show the difference of the prices of living in those days and these, I got room and board for \$15 per month, office for \$2, and had my horse kept for \$5, total expense \$22 per month. As I had exhausted all my funds in putting myself through college, I had to borrow \$200 from my cousin Sumpster Smith and \$125 from my Brother James, to start in business. Cousin Eustace Jeffries loaned me a horse to ride, and having a mechanical turn, I made my

office furniture. Shortly after I located there a Dr. Hollis also located there; but he did not last long, being a dissipated man, in one of his sprees, he took an overdose of chloral and died.

## Chapter 2

### Practice of Medicine at Riverton, Virginia

There were large lime works, the Carson Lime Company at Riverton, owned by Mr. Samuel Carson who had recently come over from Ireland and brought some of his employees with him, Richard McCoy as his manager, Charlie Crudden as foreman at the lime kiln, and four boys who worked there. Mr. Carson had four sons who were employed in different capacities, Sam Charlie, Adam and Will. After his father's death Will succeeded to the management of the business. He was my closest friend there and was a fine business man. He jokingly gave me the title of D. C. D. which meant "Damn Country Doctor." When Harry Flood Byrd of Winchester, now U.S. Senator, ran for Governor of Virginia, Will was his campaign manager and when the Shenandoah National Park was contemplated, Will was made Chairman of the Board to put it through and it is due greatly to his efforts that the Park was established. There is a monument in the Park dedicated to him, telling of his part in establishing it. He died in 1941.

There were about 100 colored laborers working at the lime kiln, among whom I practiced, and the first fee that I received was \$.50 for pulling a tooth for a Negro named Jim. Green. The Company had a large general store where the Negroes dealt and were paid off on Saturday. It had a large porch in the front of it and the Negroes would assemble there Saturday afternoon with their banjos, bones, jewsharps and mouth organs and sing, dance and pass their repartee and banter back and forth, and they were really the best minstrel shows I ever saw. It was pure unadulterated Nigger, and I was usually on hand to see the fun and to collect what I could as they were paid off. There were many amusing occurrences and I will have to digress to relate some of them.



The Negroes used to have dances on Saturday nights and there was a vacant cabin across North River on Crooked Run owned by Mr. Thos Kenner that they used. I dubbed it "Razor Hall" because some Negro was "carved up" at nearly every dance, to the tune of what I called "The Razor Jig," which I learned to play on the banjo and I have never heard it anywhere except at Riverton. At one dance, so many were "carved up" that the authorities had to take notice of it. So the ring leaders were hauled up before the Justice of the Peace, Squire Byrd Clapsaddle. He could get nothing out of them as they would not tell on each other, or as the saying goes, "Dog won't eat dog," so the case had to be dismissed. A few days after, a Negro, Jim Green, was passing my office and I said "Come here, Jim, and tell me all about the rumpuss." He came in and said, "Dr., I don't know nothin' much about it. I never goes to them dances 'caus dar's always some row, scuffling and scramblin', pullin' and haulin' or cuttin', fightin' and shootin', but they 'suated me to go to dis one. I didn't want no trouble so I gits way back in de cornder and sot down on a stool. They got to pattin' and a dancin' an a shufflin' and bime-by Ed Gray stepped on Jim White's foot. Jim, he hauls off and biffs him one and dey tuck sides and went at it. De wimmen got to hollerin' and a squalin' and somebody slapped de light out. I heard dem comin' down my way and I says to myself, Jim Green, dis ain't no place for you. You git outin here and go home. So I jus rech down in my behine pocket, I drewed out my razor and I drapt on my hans and knees and I made for de door, cuttin' and slashin' as I went. I got outin dar and went home and dats all I knows about it." As a matter of fact, that was all the cutting done there, as no one was cut above the lower part of the thigh except one great big Negro 6 ft. 4 in. tall named Will Jacobs, and he must have been stooping or dodging a blow for he was cut right across the seat of his pants. While sewing Will up the

next morning he was moralizing on the iniquity of the Negroes behaving that way and he said. "I don't mind bein' cut myself; but dey jes natcherly spiled a bran new pair of Plymouth Rock pants whut I'd jes bin down to Washington dat same day and paid \$3 for dem." Plymouth Rock pants were extensively advertised and I remember one placard had a pair of pants hanging up and a "yaller" dog sitting between the legs with his tongue hanging out panting and this dogerel just below him: "I may be yaller and full of fleas; But thank the Lord my pants don't bag at the knees."

In the store one night just before closing, a Negro named Si Lewis was dozing by the store when another Negro, Charlie Lavender, came in. Si roused up and this conversation took place, "Hello, Charlie, whut is you doin' down here dis time o night?" "I come down here to git a pair er sox." "Well ain't you got er pair er sox?" "Cose I'se got er pair er sox." "Is you got em on?" "Cose I'se got em on, you don't spose I'd come down here cold weather like dis wid out no sox on does you?" "Well, whut does you want wid another pair?" "Whut does I want wid another pair? I wants em to wear while I takes dese off and has dem washed." "Well I tell you whut's a fac, Charlie, when I puts on a pair er sox, I never takes dem off ontwel dey draps off." "Well, I don't believe in no sech doins as dat. I believes in washin' and keepin' yosef clean." Si gave him the most withering look of the utmost disgust and said. "Huh! Nigger, I bet you ain't had a drap er water under yo arms not sense you wus a baby."

Another night a Negro was sitting by the stove when another one came in from a dance at "Razer Hall," and I heard this conversation. "You bin over to de Hall?" "Yeah." "Whut dey doin' over dar?" "Pattin' an a dancin', sweatin' an a stinkin'." At another time a negro from the lime kiln just getting over a "jag" was sitting in the store and Charlie Carson said to him, "George, I am going to keep a

dollar from your wages every week until I get enough to send you to the Keely Institute and get you cured of drunkenness." George thought awhile, took off his hat, scratched his head, and said, "My Gawd, Mr. Carson, I don't want to git cured, I likes it, deed I duz. The Negroes had a strict code of ethics. It was all right to cut a man with a razor; but a low down white man's trick to cut a man with a knife, especially a Barlow Knife and they used to sing this doggerel:

"I tell you whut dat Nigger will do,  
I tell you whut dat Nigger will do,  
He'll slip up behin you and hit you on your  
    haid,  
An' he'll cut you wid a Barlow too."

It was a dirty insult for a white man to call them Nigger; but it was all right to call each other Nigger, and one of their favorite expressions was "You's a fool Nigger."

One of their favorite songs was:

**"T'll Nebber Leab Ole Dixie Lan Agen**

Whar de Mississippi washed on de sunny southern  
    shore  
An de steamboat comes a puffin' round de ben  
Stans a little whitewash cabin wide a grape vine by  
    de door  
An a old moss covered chimbly at de en.  
Dar I lef my Dinah weepin' when I said de las farewell  
An kissed de rosy lips of little Ben  
When I went to seek my fortune but I'se happy now  
    to say  
I'll nebber leab ole Dixie Lan agen.

**Chorus:**

I'se gwine back to Dixie whar I wuz bred and born  
To see olde Dinah and my baby Ben

In dat little white washed cabin whar I eber mean to  
 stay  
 An I'll nebber leab ole Dixie Lan agen.

\* \* \* \*

I'se bin way out in Kansas whar dey tole me I would  
 fine  
 Money hangin' roun like apples on de trees  
 But twus jes like Dinah tole me, dar was nuthin ob de  
 kine  
 An de wedder was so cole I like to freeze.  
 But I'se on my way to Dinah now an hope I'll soon be  
 dar  
 An hear de happy voice ob little Ben  
 For my heart am growin' liter, but de way it am so far  
 I'll nebber leab ole Dixie Lan agen.

When I sees de smoke a curlin' from dat little chim-  
 bly top  
 An mixin' wid de green leabs ob de trees  
 Den I's gwine to start a runnin' and I know I'll neber  
 stop  
 Twel I falls down by dat cabin on my knees  
 Dar I'll thank de Lawd in glory He done let me lib to  
 see  
 My Dinah and de face ob little Ben  
 For de home whar I wuz born at, it am good enough  
 for me  
 An I'll nebber leab ole Dixie Lan agen."

\* \* \* \*

I have never heard this sung anywhere except in Riverton. I think it ranks with "I'se Gwine Back to Dixie," "Carry Me Back to Ole Virginny," "My Old Kentucky Home," "Old Folks at Home," or any of the negro songs that Stephen Foster or anyone else has written. It is my favorite of all of them.

A very noted Negro, was Caesar Flint. He was a great forager of fruit, vegetables and wood; but

claimed that he took things, but never stole, especially chickens. He had the distinction of being the first man to go through Randolph Macon Academy at Front Royal. He was carrying a hod while it was building and went through from top to bottom and landed on his head in the basement. The ground was soft, but it knocked him out. They sent "hot foot" for Dr. Cline. When Cline got there Caesar was sitting up scratching his head. Cline looked at him, felt his head and said, "He's all right. You can't kill a nigger by hitting him on the head. If he had landed on his feet or shins it would have killed him." Caesar got up and walked away. Cline said, "Look here, Nigger, when are you going to pay me for this visit?" Caesar said, "Pay you? I ain't gwine to pay you. I never sont for you. I didn't want you. You ain't done nuthin fer me" and ever after that when Cline and Caesar met you would hear that conversation.

The practice was rather strenuous. I was in the fork of the rivers and as there were no bridges and I had to ford the rivers whenever I went out of the "Fork." The village, like all Gaul, was divided into three parts, the "Fork," in which I lived, across South River and across North River, and I had to walk across South River and across North River, on the railroad bridges to see patients when the rivers were past fording, and this kept up until 1894 when two bridges were completed, one across South and one across North River, and we had a big celebration when they were opened. The first bridges had been burned by Jackson during the Civil War when he, with an army of 10,000 men, drove three armies totaling 45,000 Federals out of the Valley by engaging them in succession.

I'll have to digress here to tell a joke. At the opening of the bridges Sam Clingan, a witty Irishman, posed as Uncle Sam on one of the floats. A man named Easter from Front Royal came to buy a calf from him. Sam wanted \$15, but Easter only offered him

\$12.50. After dickering for some time, Easter said, "Well, Mr. Clingan, my name is Easter, when you want to sell that calf for \$12.50, you can let me know." Sam said, "Yes, and your name will be Whitsuntide before you get that calf at that price."

Fees were rather low, one dollar for a visit in the village, one dollar for the first mile and fifty cents for each mile after that, medicine extra, and I had to carry medicine in my saddle bags. In spite of these low prices I was able to live and pay off my debt to Sumpter and Brother Jim in 3 years.

The Front Royal doctors cut me off on the south and east; but I got most of the practice on the west in the Fork and on the north in the Pine Hills and Cedarville. I had a large territory and did a good size practice; but did not collect over half of my fees. In an epidemic of measles once, I used to start out early in the morning, spend all day in the Fork, cross the North Fork at Water Lick about 6 miles away, spend the night at some patient's home and the next day visit in the Pine Hills and Cedarville, get back to Riverton that night, look out for patients there, and start out the next morning on the same circuit. The people were very kind to me, and I made many good and lasting friends, among them the Carsons, the Cruddens, Major Richards and his family, George Cone, who ran the Riverton Flour Mills and his family, Dorastus (Dode) Cone, a very close friend, Mr. Wilkins the Station Agent and family and sister-in-law Miss Maud Brock, John and Sam Morgan, the McCoy's, John Riordan and Tom Strange the merchants, the Harrises of whom John and his wife Carrie Thornhill were very close friends of mine, Mr. and Mrs. Lent, Julius Slack who ran the woodworking mills, John and Jim McCauley and Al Sargent, carpenters, and Bill Cary; Billy Brown, the shoemaker, who kept me supplied with shoes for my services, Sam and Zac Fritts, "Tuke" Woodward, and many others. Judge Lovell of Front Royal was a very close friend of mine.

I had the honor of having several children that I delivered named after me. I collected a good many bills by taking produce and disposing of it.

Riverton being in the fork of the Rivers, I had a fine opportunity for boating, of which I was very fond. I built several boats and two canvas canoes for cruising. There was the Shenandoah Canoe Club at Staunton, that used to cruise the River every year and on one of its cruises, I got the dimensions and other data of their canoes and built two, one for myself and one for Will Carson and we made a cruise down the Shenandoah to Harpers Ferry, then up the Potomac to Shepperdstown and shipped our canoes back to Riverton. Before we made this cruise, the Methodist Minister at Front Royal and Riverton, Rev. Mr. Brown, his step-son and two professors at Randolph Macon Academy started on a cruise down the river in open flat bottom boats when it was about five feet above its regular level. In running some rapids, one of the boats capsized and the minister was drowned. The people at Riverton tried to discourage us from going; but we told them it would be safer than ever for us, as we would be more careful.

The next year, 1895, I met the Canoe Club above Luray and came down the River with them. There were Professor Webb, the Commodore of the Club, Dr. Lacey Gibson, George Beall and Joe Ranson in the party. The canoes were of canvas stretched over frames 15 feet long 30 inches wide and decked over all except the cockpit 6 feet long and 20 inches wide with a combing around it, and this was closed by hatches only leaving enough room for our bodies to stick out. We used double paddles and sat on cushions in the bottom of the canoes which made them very steady and almost impossible to capsize. It was great fun running falls and rapids and there was just enough spice of danger to make it very interesting. We hunted and fished as we went along. George Beall was the fisherman and used to get up early and catch fish for break-

fast. One morning we were eating fish he had caught when a man from the neighborhood came up and asked if we caught any fish. George said he caught those we were eating that morning. The man said he had a fish trap just down the river but had not caught any for a long time. We were eating the fish George had taken out of his trap that morning. At night we would draw the canoes on shore, adjust our tents over the cockpits and sleep in them, and were secure against storms or rains. Webb always did the cooking and our favorite dish was one we called "bait." It consisted of potatoes and onions fried and then eggs scrambled with them and it was good. I have never enjoyed any other outings as much as I did those cruises on the Shenandoah River.



## Chapter 3

### I Build a Home and Get Married

The Old School Baptists used to hold all day meetings at Nineveh, about 4 miles from Riverton. I attended one of them and there I met my wife, Mary Bowen, who lived at Rockland about 2 miles distant. She was the daughter of Mr. Andrew Jackson Bowen and his wife Jane Kerfoot. He was a pillar of the Baptist Church. He was born in Andrew Jackson's time for whom his father must have voted. His oldest son was Andrew Jackson and his oldest son and his oldest son had the same name. It was a large family: Nannie, Jack, James, Lucy, Mary, Jenny, Ella and Howard. Mary, my wife, was the last one to pass away. There are quite a number of children and grandchildren living. In 1895, a golf club, probably one of the first in the State, was started in the Cedarville neighborhood. I attended the opening of it and there met Mary again and concluded that she was the girl I wanted, so I went after her and we were married April 21, 1897 in the Rockland Baptist Church. Will Carson was my best man and John Riordan and John Earl groomsmen and ushers.

When I began thinking about marriage, I began planning for a home. I bought a lot on the Fork road in Riverton and began building a house on it. The house cost about \$3000, but I only had to expend about \$750 in cash, as all the rest, material and work, I got from people who owed me in payment on their accounts. The only one that I did not have an account against, was the tinner who put on the roof. The house was completed in the fall of 1896 and was dubbed by Will Carson as the "Pill Box." My nephew, Wilmer Blackwell, had come on from the West to go to school at Randolph Macon Academy at Front Royal, and we moved into the

house in September. The engineer at the lime works had promised to do the plumbing for me and had the material and tools in the house but a sudden rush of work came on at the kiln and he could not do it so Wilmer and I went to work and did the job, which was a good one as we never had any trouble with it. We finished trimming the house inside and everything was in shape for receiving the bride. My oldest Sister, Bessie, and youngest Sister, Mildred came up and put on the finishing touches and remained there with Wilmer while we were on our honey-moon.

We spent a few days in Washington and went to New York and attended the dedication of Grant's Tomb, visited the Statue of Liberty, the Bowery and Madison Square Garden. We returned by way of Warrenton and stayed a few days at Sunny Side and returned to Riverton and took up life where we had left off. After I was married, I found I could collect more of my debts in the way of chickens, butter, eggs, pork, flour, meal, horse feed, corn and hay and what not.

In the Fall of 1897, my sisters Bessie and Mildred came to visit us. Mildred had just recovered from a case of typhoid fever and came up to recuperate. She had a serious and determined lover, Wilbur S. Hinman, whom father did not approve of as he was a "Dam Yankee" and a Republican. He, his brother Harry and a friend came to Riverton and wanted Mildred to go to Washington with them and get married. I talked with Mildred and asked her if she intended and wanted to marry Will, and she said "Yes, I do." I then told her if she intended to marry him she should marry him in our house, so they went to Front Royal, secured the license, got a minister, Mr. Bush, and were married the next morning in time to take the train for Washington. Father was very much put out and would have nothing to do with her or me for quite a while; but he finally relented and became very fond of Will. They were very happily married



Dr. E. M. Blackwell, taken on our wedding tour, 1897.



Mrs. E. M. Blackwell, taken on our wedding tour, 1897.



and have two sons and two daughters who are doing well and are a credit to them.

We spent a very happy year together and when the Spanish-American War broke out, I felt the urge to volunteer. I was doing a great deal of work, getting very little for it, and felt that I would have to make a change. I had been out all night February 15, 1898 attending a case of labor in which I delivered a lady of twins. As I rode into Riverton the next morning, John Harris, who was standing on the store porch said, "Doc, they blew up the Maine last night." I knew that meant war and I was going to get into it.

I volunteered to the War Department, but got no reply. Then my brother-in-law Will Hinman, who was the secretary to the Assistant Secretary of the Navy, Theodore Roosevelt, told me to apply to the Navy Department and he would see that it was brought to the attention of Mr. Roosevelt. I applied and soon got a reply that if my services were needed I would be notified. On April 21st I got orders from the Navy Department to report to the Naval Hospital, Washington, for examination. I went there on the 22nd and was examined that day and the next and passed; but was told to return home and if needed would be called on, as war had not then been declared. I returned via Warrenton to visit my parents, and got back to Riverton the 25th and on the 26th, I received my commission as Assistant Surgeon in the Navy, and took the oath before Justice of the Peace Squire Byrd Clapsaddle in whose family I practiced.

## Chapter 4

### I Join the Navy for the Spanish American War

On April 28th, I got orders to proceed to the Navy Yard, New York and report for duty. I reported there May 1st and was given duty under Medical Inspector Hawk treating the sick at the Marine Barracks. At the same time, another Assistant Surgeon, John Blair Gibbs, was ordered to the Yard, and we did alternate days duty, one being off duty every other afternoon. One morning when I returned, Gibbs did not show up, and I found out that he had been ordered to join a Marine Battalion to go to Cuba. The next I heard of him, he had been killed when the Spaniards made a night attack on the Marine Camp at Guantanamo Bay. If I had been on duty that afternoon I would have been ordered to that duty and might have suffered his fate.

I will digress here a while to tell a humorous story told by General Neville at one of the meetings of the George Washington Post No. 1 of the American Legion. He was a Lieutenant in the Marine Corps during the Spanish American War and at Guantanamo Bay. A private Marine from the backwoods of North Carolina had not been caught two weeks before they "hot-footed" him off to Cuba to fight Spaniards. The first thing that happened was the Spaniards made a night attack on the Camp at Guantanamo Bay and they fought them 3 nights and 2 days before they were driven off. A few days after, Neville overheard this Marine telling his experience in the fight. He said, "Gemmen, I wus skeered I wus, and Gemmen I would of run too ef I had jus knowed whur to run; but they wus a shootin' all around us and I wus afeard that ef I run I would run right into them, so I thought my best chance was to stand and fight it out; but Gemmen I shore wus skeered and I shore would of run ef I had jus knowed whur to run. But I

ain't skeered no more and ef I ever do get back home agin, I won't be afeard to walk through any grave yard in North Carolina at 12 o'clock at night. My old man got me into this tellin' me whut a fine time he had in the Army, foraging, cracking jokes and dancin' round the camp fires. I ain't seen no fun since I bin in the outfit, and ef I ever do get home agin and my old man comes beefin' round me about what a fine time he had in the Army, I ain't goin' to say a word to him, I'm just goin' to take up my foot and kick the slats outin' him."

I remained at New York about two weeks when I was ordered to the Naval Hospital, Chelsea, Massachusetts to be near by my ship, the repair ship *Vulcan*, so I could look out for the Medical department. Medical Inspector Ayres was in charge at the hospital and Passed Asst. Surgeon Manely F. Gates was the executive surgeon. He and his wife were very kind to me, took me into their mess and he gave me a lot of instruction and assistance. Gates was ordered to other duty and P. A. Surgeon F. A. Haesler was ordered to the hospital. By the first of June the *Vulcan* was ready to go into commission and I moved down aboard. Lieut. Comdr. Ira Harris was in command. He had formerly been an Ensign in the Navy during the Civil War. Lieut. Madge was executive. He had been a blockade runner and in the Confederate Navy. Other officers were Chief Engineer Chalmers, Simms and Gow, P. A. Engineers Aldrich and Scott and Asst. Eng. Neilson. Watch Officers Ensigns Holsinger and Bowers and Naval Cadet Miller and P. A. Paymaster R. H. Woods, an ex Naval Cadet, and his nephew Jack Woods as Pay Clerk. We left Boston about the middle of June and arrived at Newport News two days after, where I found Mary, who was staying with a cousin of hers, Dr. Cooper. Lieut. W. W. Gilmer joined us there as Executive as Madge who had gone on leave did not return in time to catch the ship before we left Boston.

We left Newport News and arrived at Guantanamo Bay about July 1st. The fleet was then blockading Santiago Harbor where the Spanish fleet was bottled up. A newspaper boat of the New York Herald came along side one afternoon for some assistance and said they were going up to Santiago, 40 miles away, that night and would return in the morning. The Captain gave me permission to go with them. As we passed Sibourney 6 miles to the east, Commodore Sampson's Flag Ship The New York was lying there. We were about 3 miles east of the harbor entrance when the Spanish Fleet came out and turned west and we got a good view of the running fight. The New York put on all steam and tried to get into the fight but was too far away. I went ashore at Sibourney where the Army had set up a field hospital and was treating the wounded from the battle field of Santiago. They wanted me to stay to help; but I had orders to return with the boat and had to obey.

Shortly after the battle, the Vulcan was ordered to go and survey the wrecks of the Spanish ships to see if they could be salvaged. The line officers and engineer officers went aboard the ships with other officers from the fleet and from the Chapman-Merritt Wrecking Company. They decided that the Flag Ship Maria Teresa was the only one that could be salvaged, and after some slight repairs we pulled her off the reef and towed her to Guantanamo to fix her so she could stand the trip to the United States. She was a mess inside and we employed a lot of Cubans to clean her out before going to work on her. The work was in charge of the Chapman Merritt Wrecking Company, but we rendered what assistance we could. We did a lot of work on other ships of the fleet and some of them would not have been able to get back to the United States without the repairs we did. While in Guantanamo Bay, I wanted to explore around, so I built a flat bottom skiff and with other officers enjoyed it very much, but Lieut. Gilmer, the



Executive Officer, had to go around a good deal and made use of my boat so it was called "Gilmer's gig."

Toward the middle of October we began to get orders to rush the work on the Maria Teresa so she could be taken to the United States, and Capt. Harris said she had to be there before the November election, McKinley's second term. Orders were given for her to sail on a certain date. Capt. Chichester of the Wrecking Company protested, saying she was not seaworthy and to give him another week and she would be so she could stand a storm. He was over ruled and we put to sea, the Vulvan towing the Maria Teresa and the Merritt tug towing the Vulcan. We had a heavy chain bridle attached to the towing bits on the stern and a 15 inch Manilla hawser attached to that, and to the bow of the Maria Teresa. At dinner one evening Ch. Eng. Simms said, "Captain, what will we do if that ship goes down attached to us?" The Captain replied, "We'll go down with her." Simms made no reply. He had brought 60 men from his foundry at Bristol, Rhode Island as mechanics and they swore by him. He picked out six of them, told them to get sledge hammers, crowbars, coal chisels, hack saws, and anything else necessary, and stand by the bridle at the stern and if anything happened to cut it loose and free the ship. He knew he could depend on them.

Everything went all right until we got through Crooked Island Passage, when a blow commenced. The wood deck on the forward part of the Teresa had been burned away in the fight and there were thousands of rivet holes in the iron deck. As the seas would break over the deck, the water would drain down through these holes into the ship, and finally rose so it put out the fires in the furnaces. About 3 p.m. Capt. Harris, who was aboard the Maria Teresa with 80 men, signaled for the Merritt tug to cast off and lay off their lee quarter. This was done and a line passed to the ship, and each man tied a rope

around his waist and made a noose around the line and jumped into the sea and pulled for the tug. All were gotten off without any accident and the Captain signaled us to cast her off, which was done, and in a few minutes she drifted out of sight. We made for Norfolk, arriving there two days after, and heard that the Merritt had arrived at Charleston, South Carolina. A few days after we reached Norfolk, a Morgan Line ship arrived from the West Indies and reported that a two funnel war ship was seen aground on the reefs at Cat Island in the Bahamas.

Captain Harris was detached from the Vulcan and Captain Bowman H. McCalla was ordered to command the ship and ordered to find the Teresa and see if she could be salvaged. He commanded the Marblehead at the fight in Guantanamo Bay. He was a very able officer and a strict disciplinarian, called by some "Billy Hell McCalla." We sailed in company with the large tug Potomac, Capt. Blow commanding, and found the Maria Teresa on the reef as reported. Her bottom was stove in, the tide was rising and falling in her, and there was no chance of salvaging her. Capt. McCalla went in the Potomac to Nassau to report to the Navy Department and we remained at anchor and salvaged what we could from the ship in the way of relics. I got a large brass cap about 15 inches in diameter off a towing bit of the Maria Teresa. This was polished up on the Vulcan and I use it as a gong in my dining room to announce meals. Among other things, a cat was left on the ship when abandoned, and it is supposed it steered for Cat Island. The natives had taken it off and we went ashore and got it. After the Potomac returned, we returned to Norfolk I went on leave and the ship was ordered to League Island, Philadelphia to discharge the crew and go out of commission. Assistant Surgeon Will Thomas, who was sent to the ship for the trip to Cat Island, resigned from the Service and took the cat to New York and entered it in a cat show. The cat took a prize, had a fit and died.

## Chapter 5

### The Cruise of the U. S. S. Abarenda to Samoa

I was detached from the Vulcan on January 9, ordered to the Receiving Ship Franklin at Norfolk. I was then ordered to the yacht Vixen and then to the Cargo ship Abarenda, which was fitting out to take coal and structural iron to Pago-Pago Samoa in the South Pacific Ocean to build a coal shed and wharf to establish a coaling station there. I went home on leave and brought Mary back with me. We finished coaling ship at Lamberts Point and started for Samoa April 30th with 5,000 tons of coal and 1,500 tons of steel for the wharf. The officers were Capt. Ben Tilley, Lt. W. E. Sewell, Executive, Lt. G. H. Stafford, Navigator, Lt. C. H. Hayes, Engineer, Chas. Morris, Paymaster, and the watch officers were Ensigns Hand and Yancey Williams, and Boatswains Henry Hudson and Oleson. We also had a sergeant and 15 Marines aboard.

We arrived at Montevideo, Uruguay May 30th. The only land we sighted on the voyage was Fernando-de-Noronha, a penal colony of Brazil, about 100 miles off the coast. There was a heavy fog when we arrived at Montevideo and we had a hard time finding the harbor. It is a beautiful clean city. Located on a promontory, it sheds the water in three directions, and the rains leave very little street cleaning to be done. One day I noticed some horsemen riding along the street dragging goat skin or sheep skins bags. I asked what they were, and was told that the bags were filled with milk or cream at the ranch or dairy and by the time they were dragged into town butter had formed, also buttermilk, and it was sold. Another amusing incident happened. We were waiting for a street car to go out to a football game. Several passed, but did not stop. The Paymaster said he was going to jump the next one. He did, but it stopped and he

was put off. The sign "Completo" was on the car, which meant it was full, and no more were allowed on. We stayed there 10 days and departed for Punta Arenas in the Straits of Magellan, our next stop.

We arrived at the eastern entrance of the Straits of Magellan and saw several wrecks. The tide rises and falls about 20 feet and the current runs 10 to 15 miles an hour. We went in, found a good anchorage, and anchored, as we could not reach Punta Arenas that day as daylight was only about 8 hours. We arrived about 2 o'clock the next day and found they had a deluge which had filled the streets with mud from the mountains over a foot deep in places, and we had to wear gum boots. There is much beef and mutton shipped from there, and we filled up with it at 2 cents a pound. We stayed there three days and went on to the next anchorage as we could not run at night. We were 5 days going through the Strait, which was very good, considering that it took Magellan 54 days to get through in a sailing ship bucking head winds.

We passed Cape Froward, a bold promontory 1,000 feet high, 55° south, the most southern part of the continent, early in the morning and an amusing incident happened. Yancey Williams was on top of the pilot house taking bearings on the cape with the pelorus and it was very cold, being June and winter. He came into the ward room, where I was eating breakfast, shivering and his teeth chattering. He said, "Damn the man who put that pelorus on top of the pilot house, I hope he'll freeze to death and go to hell." A Swedish Quarter Master was winding the ward room clock. He turned around and said, "Dot vas me. I pud it up dare." It struck my funny bone as being very ludicrous, and I often laugh at it.

When we got to the west end and headed out into the Pacific, it was anything but pacific, as every wave came over the bow and the spray up on the bridge so we had to duck behind the weather cloth to avoid it. We went on up the coast to Valparaiso and on

the way could see Mt. Aconcagua over 24,000 feet high and 120 miles away. It is the highest peak in America and always covered with snow. When we got to Valparaiso we found the U. S. Cruiser Newark there. She had run out of coal about 200 miles down the coast. The crew had gone ashore and cut wood to use and found it would not burn and the Chilean Navy had to send coal to them. Valparaiso is in two parts, one on the beach and one back of the beach on the plateau. They have lifts to go up and down, consisting of an inclined railway with cables to pull the cars up and down, one car going up and the other coming down on another track, so its weight helped to pull the other one up. Several of us had a very interesting horseback ride around the city. We went out at the west end and up on the plateau, skirted around the city, crossing deep chasms and gorges, and came in at the east end, going about 15 miles. Valparaiso had a flood and the streets were filled with mud.

We stayed there about a week and then struck out across the Pacific for Samoa. We passed Pitcairn Island and spent most of one day there. This Island was discovered in 1767 and was named after the Midshipman who sighted it from the mast head. He was a nephew of Major Pitcairn who led the British at the Battles of Lexington and Concord. There were about 160 people on the island, descendants of the mutineers of the English Ship *Bounty*, which was burned in Bounty Bay when they landed there in 1790. The Island was rediscovered by Capt. Mayhew Folger of the Whaler *Topaz* in 1808. All the mutineers were then dead except Alexander Smith, who had changed his name to John Adams and there were about sixty of their descendants, John Adams had seen the error of his ways. He had saved one Bible from the *Bounty* and with that he taught the children to read and write. Capt. Folger was surprised to see smoke rising from the island and more surprised to see a boat shove off and come along side and a voice in good English

say, "Throw us a rope, friend." When Folger reported finding the Island, the English sent a warship to get the mutineers; but John Adams was the only one left and had done such a good work on the Island, they did not disturb him.

From there we went to Papeete on Tahiti, the largest one of the Society Islands belonging to France. We stayed there about 10 days and had a fine time. A family named Goupil took us in tow and paid us a great deal of attention. They gave us a picnic up in a gorge in the mountains over 1,000 feet deep and you could hardly see the sky. Before we left Norfolk I got a guitar for the Ward Room to accompany those who sang. We also got a blank book in which we wrote the words of songs, and each one was required to write in it the songs he knew. We called it "The Book of the Opera." We used it a good deal at Tahiti and the people took such a fancy to the songs that we presented them with the book when we left. The natives often wore only one piece, a lava-lava, about two yards of bright calico, wrapped around them without pins or buttons. Men and women would meet in the street and swap lava-lavas right there. Pearl fishing and raising vanilla beans and copra were the chief industries. The pearl industry was carried on solely by native divers. Some of them could dive in 20 fathoms of water and remain down for about 5 minutes.

From Papeete, we took our departure for Samoa and passed a number of beautiful islands on the way. We at last came in sight of Rose Island, the most eastern atoll of Samoa; then the three Manua Islands, the first of the group inhabited; then Tutuella, our destination which we passed by and went on to Apia on Upola Island to get mail from the United States. We arrived at Apia, Upola August 10, 1899, got the mail and some fresh provisions. We left Apia the 11th and arrived at Pago-Pago, Tutuilo the 13th. Our progress was slow on account of some engine trouble and we had strong head winds. We arrived at Pago-



Top, left to right: Mataafa and Maliator Tanu, rival chiefs; center, souvenirs. Center, top: Samoan Belles Sclese and Mele; center, U. S. S. Abarenda. Center, bottom: Making *Kava* and Samoan *Fale* (house). Bottom: Falls of Papasea, Pageant and Falls of Papaloloa.







Samoan girls of Pago-Pago, Samoa. Some of our *Fleges* (friends).



Pago (pronounced Pango-Pango) Tutuila about 10 o'clock the 13th. This is a beautiful harbor surrounded by high mountains. It is the shape of a shoe, the entrance at the top; the chief village, Pago-Pago, at the toe. Faga-Toga and the coaling station are at the instep and Aur at the heel. We found Civil Engineer W. I. Chambers and his two assistants, Mr. McKay and Mr. Gayler there; also Mr. Tibbitts, the Contractor, his Engineer, Mr. Leonard, foreman, Mr. Graves and about 30 workmen.

## Chapter 6

### Life in the Samoan Islands

We commenced unloading the cargo which was a tedious job and to add to our troubles, the coal in one of the holds caught fire. We poured water into the hold and put it out and then employed about 30 natives to get it out and put it ashore. We settled down to our regular routine. I established a clinic ashore and after sick call on the ship I would go ashore and hold sick call there. As I did not know the language, I had a Mrs. Pike, a half-caste Tahitian, to assist me. As it was not always convenient to send me ashore in the ship's boats, I built a flat bottom skiff in which I could go and come as I pleased, and called it the "Red Cross" with a red cross painted on the stern; but Sewell said "You had better call it the 'mouli pi pi' which was a risqué native dance, as we would often go ashore in it at night to the siva-sivas or native dances. These dances were often made to perpetuate certain occurrences and were performed sitting and swaying the bodies and arms in rhythm and singing and beating on hollow logs and also standing and going through various motions. They were very much opposed by the missionaries.

The London Mission established itself in the Islands in the early part of the 19th Century and did not take account of crossing the 180th meridian and so established Saturday as Sunday. The Catholics came along some years later and told the natives they had the wrong day. The London Mission would not admit it until they thought the natives were educated enough to understand how the mistake was made. After the natives became somewhat reconciled, the Seventh Day Adventists came along and told them they had the right Sunday at first, so the poor natives did not know who was right. Then the Mormons

came along with another religion which further confused them, so there was a good deal of rivalry on account of the different religions. The London Mission had gotten the lead and kept it, as about three-fourths of the natives were of that faith. They had done a great work among the natives. They established schools, translated the Bible and school books into the native language, and when we were there it was very rare to find a child 10 years old that could not read and write in their language. A Mr. Cooper who lived at Leoni at the west end of the Island was the head of the Mission there. He had a boat with a small cabin, 12 oarsmen and a sail to visit the various stations. The oarsmen would always sing to keep time and it was a sight worth seeing when they would go by singing and rowing. They had about 25 native missionaries in the Solomon Islands, New Guinea and Borneo.

Shortly after we arrived, Yancey Williams and I went to Church at Pago-Pago. There were not seats; but only a gravel floor and everyone carried a mat to sit on. We went in and took our seats on the floor. When Manga, the Chief, and his wife came and took their seats in the amen corner, he motioned to Yancey and me to come and sit with them. The children sat up front and the men on one side and the women on the other. If a child was inattentive or misbehaved, someone behind would pick up a gavel and crack it on the head. They had splendid voices and we enjoyed the singing, although we did not understand the language. When the Seventh Day Adventists came, they established dispensaries and hospitals and cared as much for their physical wants as they did for their spiritual, so got many adherents. A Dr. Braught at Apia was a fine surgeon and did a great deal of work among the natives. There was a great deal of elephantiasis among them which affected the legs which would sometimes be as large around as water buckets and the scrotum would weigh 50 or 60 pounds. Noth-

ing could be done for the legs, but I amputated a good many scrotums.

Everyone aboard ship was supposed to have some girl friend ("Flenge") ashore who would bring them fruits and Samoan articles and they were supposed to reciprocate with presents or food of some kind, canned salmon was the favorite. One officer, Hand, did not treat his friend very well. When she would bring curios or fruit he would often give her a bag of clothes to wash. She used to bring him fish, and one day he told her to tell her father, Laoma, the fish were too small and too few. The next day she came back, saw him standing on deck, and hollowed at him, "Lima," which was Hand, 5 fingers in Samoa, "Laoma say, 'More Kaikai (food) more fish'." There were a lot of natives around the ship in canoes and a big laugh went up from them, and often when they would see him on deck they would yell at him, "Lima, Laoma say, 'More Kaikai, more fish'," and he rarely came on deck when they were around. One day some natives were on board and one of the mess attendants handed a girl a piece of ice. She dropped it at once and yelled "Vevela," which means hot. She never had seen ice and the cold sensation was the same to her as heat.

The fine mat, Ie Tonga, is the most valuable thing the Samoans have. It is made from the pandanus or screw pine leaf and all of us wanted to get one. One day Yancey and I went to Aur in my boat to see if we could get one; but could not find any. There was a fale, native house, about 50 yards away and a woman, the wife of a native missionary. She had a fine mat she wanted \$10 for; but we did not have it and did not care to pay that much. We were sitting on the floor. I had on blue serge trousers of very fine material and had my feet pointed toward her. She reached out and felt the bottom of the trousers and said she would trade the mat for the trousers. They were getting thin in the seat so I thought it was a pretty good

trade, but how to effect it, I did not know. Finally, I took the mat, went behind the house, shifted my trousers, wrapped the mat around my waist, fastened it up with my belt and gave her the trousers. We then went to the boat, inside the reef in a shallow lagoon, to return to the ship. We started back when here came the woman running down to the beach waving the trousers.. She ran into the water, seized the stern of the boat, and said she wanted her mat back as her husband would beat her when he came back. I told her it was her proposition and I would not return it. I told Yancey I was going to push her away and for him to pull hard and get away from her. I pushed her away and Yancey layed back manfully and broke one of the oars. She caught us and we had to go back to splice the oar. The crowd assembled rather threatening and we thought discretion the better part of valor so returned her fine mat.

They had a peculiar fishing custom there. An old man named Magia who lived about 200 feet up on the side of the mountains above Pago-Pago claimed that he owned all the fish in the harbor. At certain seasons they would have fish drives. Magia would be up at daybreak calling the fish. All the boats would stretch across the mouth of the harbor with lines running across them and cocoanut branches weighted and hanging down 10 to 15 feet in the water. The boats would pull slowly up the harbor, scaring and driving the fish before them. When they got up near the end and the water became shallow, they would stretch a long net or seine in front of the boats from shore to shore and haul that up gradually until the fish got in a very small space. Men would stand outside and spear and keep fish from jumping over and men, women and children would be inside catching them and throwing them on shore. When all were caught and piled up, every man, woman and child there was entitled to a share of the fish. They would form in line, Magia presiding, and pick up a fish as they passed

the pile and keep this up until all the fish were taken. Whenever this would happen, we would send our mess steward up there with the mess boys to get our part of the fish.

There was a law in Samoa that when a man became a chief in a village or a high chief of the community, he was a law unto himself and could do anything he pleased. While this law is not acknowledged in civilized communities, nevertheless it is a fact that man generally does just whatever he wants to do if he thinks he can get away with it, and I relate the following instance to illustrate my point.

A man by the name of Fagiema in the village of Utulee was working in his taro patch one day and as he went home to dinner he speared a fish in the lagoon and took it home where he found his father and another village chief. He gave them the fish and they cooked it and ate it. Now the Samoan law was that when a man caught anything hunting or fishing or gathered fruit, he had to take it to the high chief and he took what he wanted and gave the rest back. About the time they had finished the fish, Letuli the high Chief of the Village came along and inquired what was doing. When he found out he was mad that the fish was not presented to him. He went across the creek which divided the village and gathered all his young men, about 40, went back to Fagiema's, who had gone back to work in his taro patch, turned his family out of the house, killed all his pigs and chickens, took all his fine mats and forbid Fagiema forever thereafter to fish in the sea or hunt or gather fruit from the land, which meant he must starve to death. This did not suit Fagiema and, as the ship was at Apia, he appealed to Tui-Tele, the high chief at Leone. Tui-Tele ordered Letuli to report to him, but he refused saying he was as big a chief as Tui-Tele. There was quite a bit of apprehension about trouble until the ship returned, when the Captain ordered Letuli to report to him. He refused at first, so the Captain,





THE HIGH COURT OF SAMOA





Monument to the U. S. and Englishmen killed in Samoa, 1899.



Sergeant Meredith of the Marines with 12 fita-fitas, soldiers of the native guard, after him. They met him coming to Pago-Pago and returned with him. He was tried before a court consisting of the Captain, Executive Officer, and the Navigator. He claimed that being a high chief he had the power of life and death over Fagiema. He was informed that the Samoan law did not hold anymore. To show what a big chief he was, he traced his genealogy back 33 generations. Nevertheless, he was found guilty, made to make restitution for the damage he had done, was confined to the limits of Pago-Pago Harbor for a year and his name was taken from him and was given to another Chief, which was the worst punishment, except death, that could be inflicted upon a Samoan for, to all intents and purposes, he was legally dead and no more.

According to Samoan customs, when you ask for anything they have to give it to you. A man there had a boat built to carry passengers ashore from the ships at a shilling apiece. When the boat was finished, Manga, the Chief, asked for it and he had to give it to him. The builder sued the owner for his pay and he said he could not earn the money to pay, as Manga had taken his boat. At the trial, Manga was made to return the boat, but in the meantime he had injured the boat and paid \$10 to have it fixed and he brought in a bill for it, which was not allowed.

A very amusing thing happened one day. A man and his wife came aboard with a pretty child. An officer who had just arrived and did not know the customs admired the child and jokingly asked them to give it to him. They said yes. The next day they came down with the child and all the family to give the child away with great ceremony, and he had to talk mighty nice and give them a lot of canned salmon to keep them from giving him the child.

Going on malagas (visiting other villages) is a favorite pastime of theirs. They had fine boats, some of them double-deckers 60 feet long and 30 rowers.

A whole village would get into several boats and go to visit another village and put up on them until they had eaten them out of food and then move on to the next village and eat them out of food, and the only way these villages could get even was to return their malagas and eat them out of food. Some malagas lasted several months, visiting villages and eating up all the food and moving on to the next. At one village at which we anchored, the chief came aboard and complained that a malaga was there and had been away from their village six months living off of other villages, so we took them aboard and carried them back to their village.

The work was proceeding very well on the wharf, but they needed some piling and other things, so the Captain decided to go to Auckland, New Zealand, to get them. We went to Apia November 30, 1899 and heard upon our arrival that England had ceded her rights in Samoa to Germany which ceded her certain islands in the East Indies and that Samoa had been divided between Germany and the United States, Germany taking the large western islands of Upolo and Savaii, while we took the small eastern islands of Tutuila, Manua and Rose Island. They got more land, but we got the best harbor, Pago-Pago, in the islands. We left Apia December 5th, arrived at Pago-Pago that evening, and started for Auckland at 7 p.m. on the 7th. We crossed the 180th meridian and lost a day. Instead of its being Tuesday, December 12th, it was Wednesday, December 13th. We had an uneventful voyage and arrived in Auckland the afternoon of the 16th.

## Chapter 7

### We Visit Auckland, New Zealand

Auckland was a very delightful city of about 35,000 inhabitants, and I had rather live there than anyplace I have ever been outside the United States. The people are mostly of Scotch descent and not descended from convicts as many in Australia are. New Zealand has some very advanced laws and ideas. No strikes are allowed there, as all disagreements must be settled by boards of arbitration. There is a graduated land tax. A man is entitled to a certain amount of land or property without paying any tax on it. Over and above that, he is taxed and the more he gets the higher the rate of tax he has to pay. They raise a great many sheep and cattle and the shipment of beef and mutton and wool to England is a big business. We made some very delightful acquaintances there among them, the American Consul, Mr. Dillingham and family, the Mayor, Mr. Goldie and family, the Witthefords, the Salmons, the Buddles, the Brighams, the Maitlands, and others. It seemed very curious to have Christmas in summer and the flaming red flamboyant Christmas tree. They always have horse races during the Christmas holidays and our officers and men were admitted free of charge. The officers were given free passes over the railroads and men in uniform could travel free. They use the parimutual or totalizator system in betting on races. One day at the races five of our blue jackets put up one pound a piece on a horse named Blue Jacket. He had his legs bandaged up and did not look like a winner; but he came in ahead and paid 20 to 1. The blue jackets stayed ashore until they had spent their money and just got back aboard in time to keep from being declared deserters.

Mr. Sewell, the Executive, and I took a trip up to Whakarewarewa (called Whaka for short) in the hot

lake district about 175 miles up in the country and it was quite interesting but the geysers and hot lakes are not near as extensive as in Yellowstone Park. A tribe of native Maoris live among the hot lakes which furnish all their heat in winter and cook their food for them. There is a very peculiar worm or plant that grows there called the vegetable caterpillar. It looks like a caterpillar with a sprout about 3 inches long growing out of its head. There were some very beautiful lakes there and we took quite a cruise on one of them. We had some lovely trips around the country; one out to Blow Hole Bay on the west coast, where the water shot into a cave and blew out through a hole 100 feet up into the air.

While in New Zealand, some troops from India, South Africa and Australia visited Auckland and the Premier, Richard Seddon (King Dick) came up from Wellington, the capital, to review them. He had been a blacksmith, but was a very able man and rough as a rasp, as they say. I met his secretary, Mr. Thomas Hamer and in conversation with him I remarked that I wanted to visit Mahuta the King of the Maoris about 40 miles out of Auckland. He said, "When you are ready to go, wire me at Government expense and I will have the Governor's private car here to take you and your party."

I made up a party consisting of the Captain and several officers of the ship, the American Consul and family, a Mr. Wittheford and family, a wealthy man who had been very nice to us, Mayor Goldie and family, and others. Mr. Wittheford had a special car hitched on the Governor's stocked with all kinds of eats and drinks. We arrived at the station about three miles from the Maori village about 11 o'clock. We were on the bank of a river and two war canoes with Maori warriors dressed up with paint and gaudy colors to row us to the village. We went grandly up the river, the warriors singing and keeping time with their oars. King Mahuta and his wife met us at the landing



and escorted us up to the big native house where he had a bountiful feast spread of all the fruits, vegetables and meats raised on the Island, to which we did full justice. After the feast we had some native dances and the King presented the Captain with various gifts, among them a robe made out of Kiwi feathers, a bird without wings, found in New Zealand only. After a very enjoyable visit we went back to the canoes and down the river to the station and took the train back to Auckland. Mr. Wittheford had the table spread and we had a sumptuous supper on our way back, after a most enjoyable day. Mayor Goldie's family, consisting of three young men and two young ladies were very nice to us. They had a cottage on Lake Tokapuna on the north shore of the harbor and a sail boat and we spent many happy afternoons and evenings there. The Maoris have a tradition that Lake Tokapuna was formed by a giant taking Mt. Rangitots out of it and setting it up on the other side of the harbor.

We took on board a lot of totaro logs for piling. These logs are heavier than water and have a resin in them that keeps the taredo insect, which is very destructive, from boring into and destroying them. After taking on other supplies, we took our departure from Auckland February 4th and arrived at Pago-Pago February 11th, after a most delightful visit. We were busy all day the 12th unloading stores and on the 13th we left for Apia.

## Chapter 8

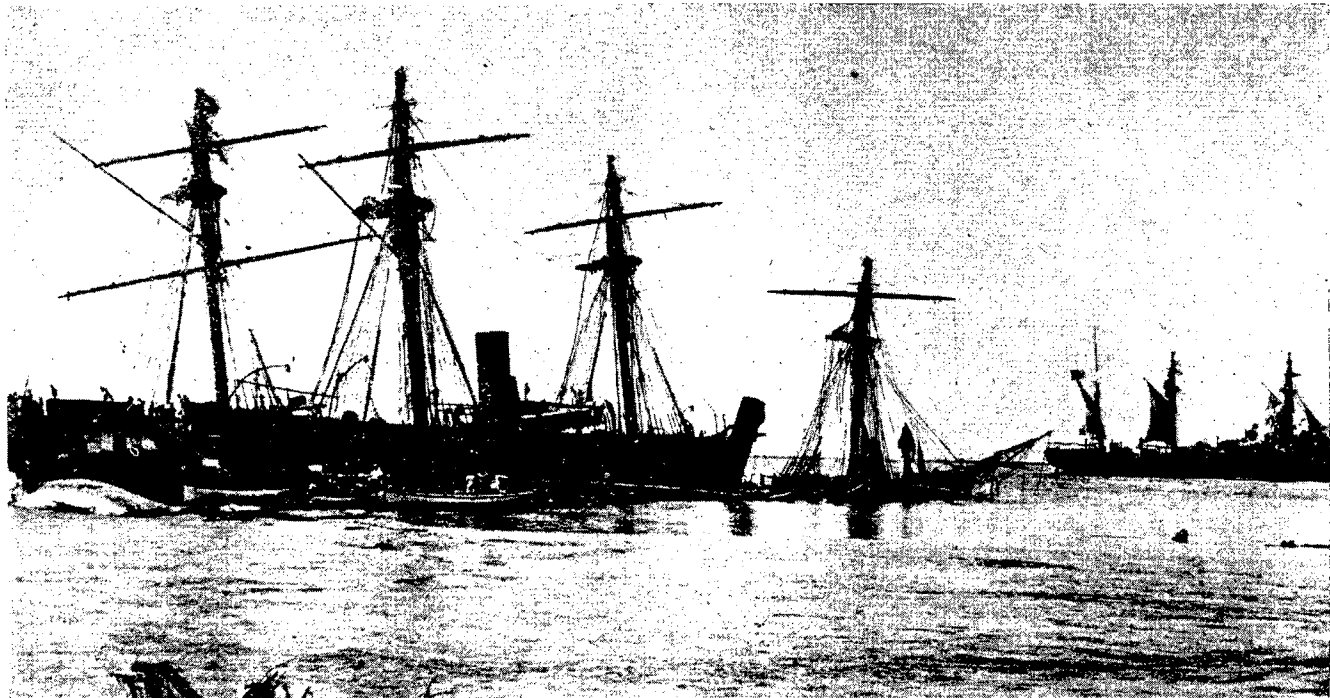
### Hoisting the German Flag and the American Flag Over the Samoan Islands

When we arrived we found great preparation going on for hoisting the German flag and taking possession of the Islands on March 1st. The Captain decided to remain for the ceremonies. There were about 5,000 natives at the flag raising and the Captain Stafford and I attended. Dr. Solf was the new Governor. The German ship Cormoran under Capt. Emsman and the Abarenda saluted with 21 guns. We called on the new Governor and he returned the Captain's call and we saluted him with 13 guns. There was a big ball given ashore that night which most of us attended.

On one of our trips to Apia the American Consul, Mr. Osborne, invited the Captain Executive Officer and Navigator to dinner to meet Dr. Solf, the new German Governor, who in the course of the dinner related some of his experiences. He said, "In passing through the United States I noticed a very peculiar custom. Everywhere I took a meal, they placed a glass of water beside my plate. I got to drinking it and I really got to liking it."

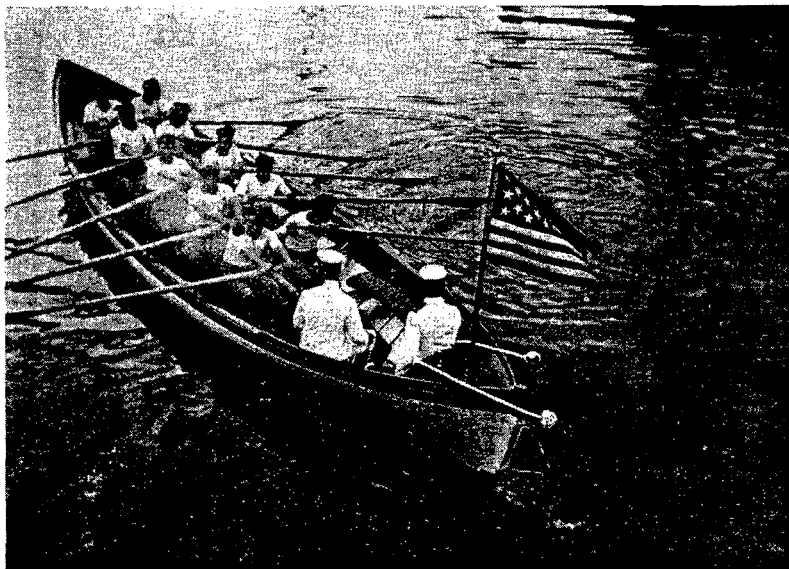
We left for Pago-Pago March 3rd, but returned to Apia March 8th to meet the steamer and get mail. Ensign L. C. Richardson and Naval Cadet Bowers came on the steamer to relieve Hand and Williams who went on the next steamer. About 9 P.M. it began to blow so hard that we had to put to sea. The fog was so heavy that we could not see to get into Pago-Pago so had to cruise around until the 10th before we could see to get in.

Pago-Pago, March 16, 1900. Just eleven years ago today a storm at Apia wrecked the U. S. Ships Trenton, Vandalia and Nipsic and the German ships Adler



Wrecks of the Trenton Vandalia and Ninsic in a storm at Ania Samoa 1889





Lieut. Richardson, Dr. Blackwell and *Fita-Fitas* in Seumantafa's gig, presented to him by the U. S. Navy Department for rescuing U. S. Navy seamen in the Storm, Apia, 1889.



High Chief Seumantafa.



and Eber, one of which is still lying on the reef there broken in two. The British ship Calliope was able to put to sea. The Nipsic was salvaged; but 150 men were drowned. The Samoan Chief, Seumanatafa, was instrumental in saving many of the American sailors and as a reward, the Navy Department sent him a handsome gold watch and a fine 30 ft. surf boat. When the Germans took possession he got us to take the boat to Pago-Pago and keep it for him, as he said the Germans would take it from him.

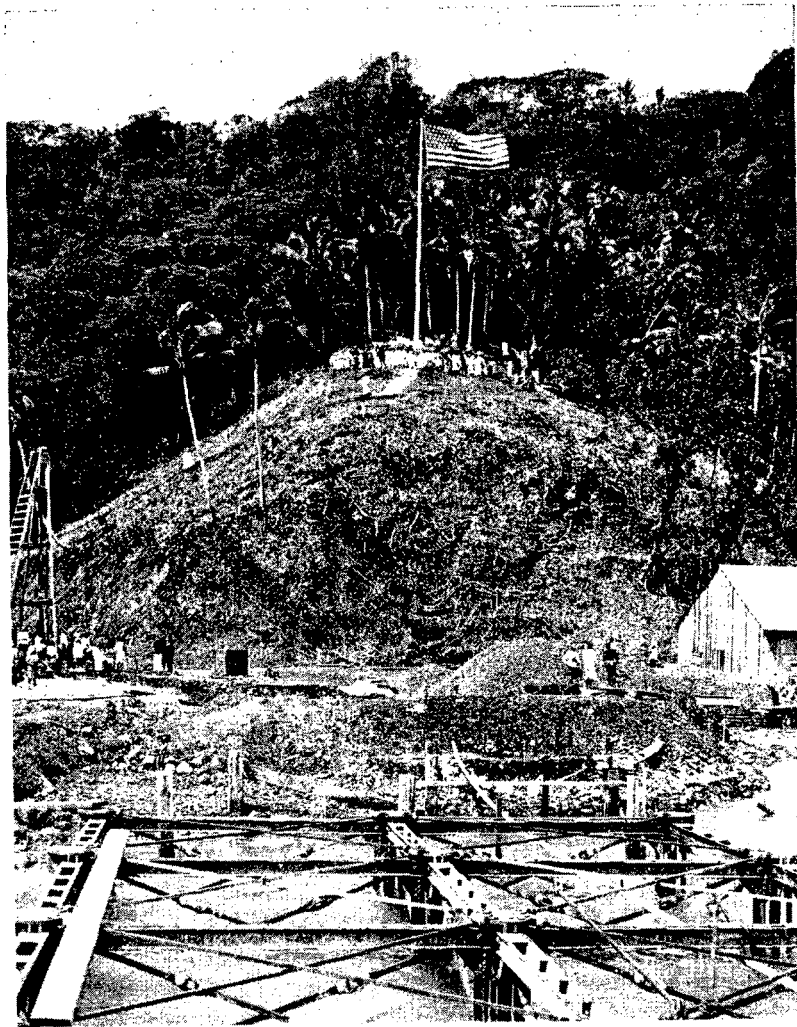
A great many native boats and the German cruiser Cormoran with Gov. Solf on board, came into Pago-Pago to be present at the hoisting of the American flag and taking possession of the Islands April 17, 1900. When the flag was raised, the Abarenda and the Cormoran fired salutes of 21 guns. There were festivities among the natives on shore, and Gov. Solf and Capt. Emsman of the Cormoran called on Gov. Tilley. We entertained the officers of the Cormoran in the ward room that evening. Everything went off without a hitch.

We had gone over to the Manua Islands on April 12th and taken possession of them. When we took possession of the islands, Tui Manna, the high chief, did not take to it kindly. He wanted to know what right we had to interfere with them, a small group of islands thousands of miles from the United States. The Capt. told him we did not mean to oppress them but to shield them from unscrupulous people. He saw the uselessness of opposition and submitted graciously. He bore himself every inch a king, kept the Capt. waiting an hour before he came to the council house, drank the Kava first, which is always done by the highest in rank, and he let no one else use his cup.

We celebrated July 4th at Pago-Pago, and on the 7th we went to the Manua Islands. These Islands were the first of the Samoan discovered or inhabited and Tui Manua, the High Chief, outranks all other high chiefs in the Samoan Islands. We took him

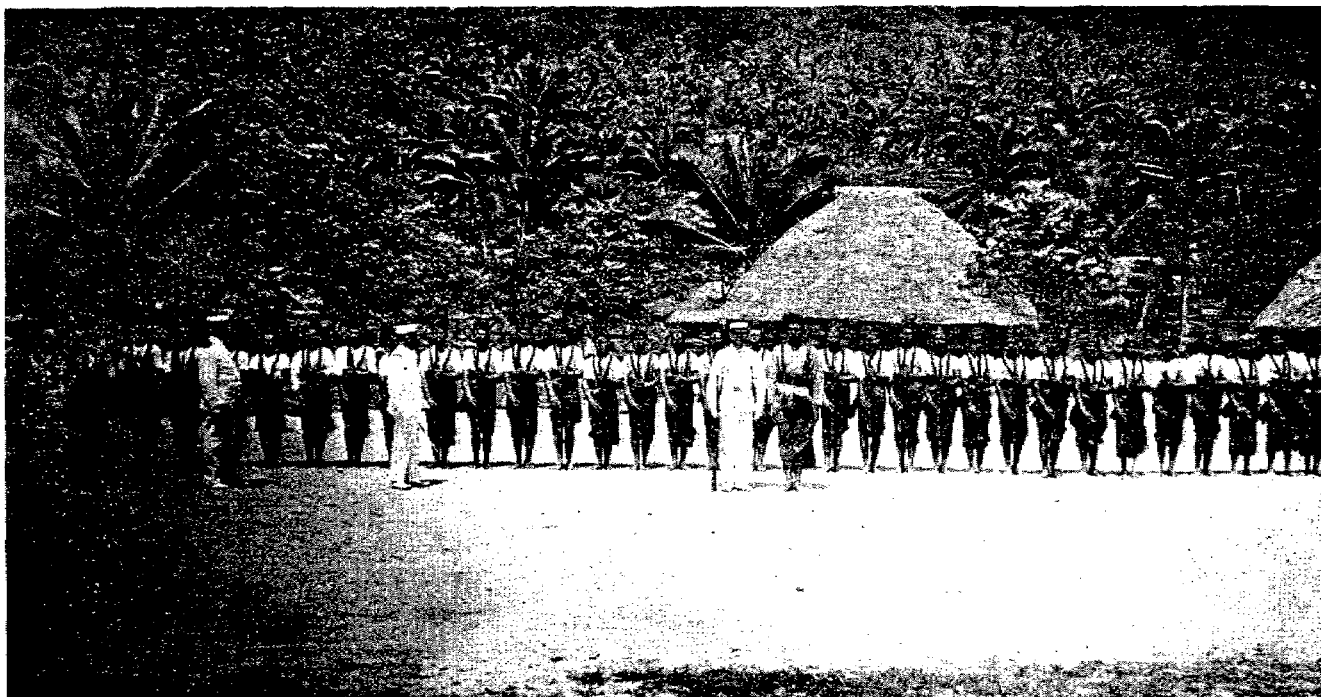
aboard with about 50 natives and went to Rose Island about 60 miles to the east to take formal possession of it, arriving there on the 10th of July. There is a large lagoon surrounded by coral reefs which is very hard to get into through the narrow channel when the tide is ebbing. I was the only officer who went ashore and the Captain gave me an American flag to hoist and take possession of the Island. Tui Manua and the natives and about 15 of the crew went ashore with me. The men cut a pole and set it up. I hoisted the flag, Tui Manua said a prayer, and we took possession. The Captain came shore just as we finished.





Hoisting the U. S. Flag at Pago-Pago, Samoa.





Capt. Tilley and Commander Dorn inspecting the Native Guard (*Fila-Filas*) at Pago-Pago, Samoa. Sergt. Meredith, Commanding.



## Chapter 9

### Governing the Samoans

After we took possession of the Samoan Islands, the mail steamers commenced calling at Pago-Pago, so we did not have to go to Apia for the mail. On July 25th the Moana arrived with the mail. I received my commission as Assistant Surgeon with the rank of Lieut. Jr. Grade in the regular service. When the division of the Islands was made we were ordered to enlist a native guard, fita-fitas, of 100 men for Tutuila and 20 for Manua. I examined all of them physically and had to reject very few applicants, as they were of fine physique. Their vision was excellent and there were very few decayed or missing teeth. They were given the rating of landsmen in the Navy and were put in charge of Sergeant Meredith of the Marine Corps to be drilled. Chief Leiato, a one-eyed man from the village of Fagiatua was made Commander of the guard for political reasons; but a man named Poti, the best soldier of the lot, soon learned how to drill them and conduct all maneuvers. The fita-fitas were a fine body of men. The most of them were kept in Pago-Pago; but some were stationed at other villages.

The Samoans have luxuriant growths of straight black hair in its natural state; but they usually put lime paste in it Friday night to get the rancid cocoanut oil out of it, wash it out Saturday night, and put in fresh cocoanut oil for Sunday, and this makes the hair auburn. I never saw but one bald-headed man in the Islands, and he had three dents in his head that you could lay a finger in. I asked Mr. Gurr, the secretary about it and he told me that this man had an enemy that he wanted to humiliate, so he and his friends caught him and went through the pantomime of killing and scraping him like a hog. This was the

greatest humiliation and degradation that could be heaped upon a man and thereafter he could not raise his voice in council until he had avenged himself upon his enemy. So he waylaid this man, who had degraded him, with a club and left him for dead with three dents in his head; but he recovered.

A Mr. Gurr, from Apia, who had been in the Islands for 10 or 15 years and knew the language and customs of the natives, was appointed Secretary to the Governor to help to form the native government. Native Governors and Judges were appointed for the different districts. Manga Moimoi was appointed Governor of the Eastern District of Tatuila which included Pago-Pago, and Mauga Taufasa, his uncle, was appointed Judge. Tui Tele was Governor of the Western District and Tui Manua Governor of the Manua and Rose Islands. Their laws and customs that were not vicious, were interfered with as little as possible. They taxed themselves to pay the native officials. There were about 6,000 inhabitants on Tutuila and about 2,000 on Manua and they taxed every man and woman and child \$1.00 per head, to be paid out of the copra crop (dried cocoanut). We took the crop, marketed it for them, took the \$8,000 out of it, and returned to the natives more money than they used to receive from the traders, which shows how the natives were cheated. The natives were charged about twice as much as the whites. A lava-lava would cost a native \$1.25 and a white man \$ .50. All through the South Seas, the natives are imposed upon in this way and there is a saying that the natives would be better off if they had burned the whalers, eaten the traders and drowned the missionaries. The missionaries are really the best class of people to be found in the islands and they do a great deal to counteract the bad influences of the traders and others.

The Black Birders used to be the curse of the islands in the early days. They were pirates who would send armed men ashore to capture men and women

and sell them in Peru, Bolivia and Chili to work in the mines. Bully Hayes was one of the most noted of these. The two Pyllstatt Islands between Samoa and New Zealand were inhabited by about 200 people. One day two Black Birder vessels appeared off them and killed or captured every one of the inhabitants and the islands have been uninhabited since.

We once took a Mr. Parker, an old gentleman from Apia, to the Manua Islands where he had been a trader 25 or 30 years before, and the natives were very fond of him. He told us how he had saved the natives there from capture. Two Black Birders appeared off the Island and as was the custom, he and some natives went aboard to trade. The Captain took him into the cabin and proposed to him that he go ashore and bring off all the able-bodied men he could at so much a head. He agreed and got into his boat and when he got out of gunshot range, he yelled to the natives on board that they were going to be captured, so they all jumped overboard and swam ashore. The Black Birders sent armed men ashore to capture the men who only had clubs and knives and spears, so were at a great disadvantage. The Black Birders scoured the bush that day, as the natives had fled to it, but camped near a cliff at night. Parker formed the natives in the bush near the camp and told them they must rush the Black Birders and kill them. They did so and some were killed; but they out-numbered the Black Birders and those that were not killed were thrown over the cliff into the sea. The ships then sailed away.

Shortly after we took possession of the Islands Lt. Sewell was relieved by Lt. E. J. Dorn as Executive and Mrs. Dorn came down a month or two after. Mrs. Hudson, the wife of Boatswain Hudson who was to have remained in charge of the coaling station, had come down some time before. A cottage had been built at the station for them to occupy. After we had taken over the Islands the Captain, as Governor, used

to make trips to all the principal villages to get in touch with the natives. I generally went with him and while he and his secretary, Mr. Gurr were holding "pow-wows" with the chiefs, I would be holding clinics and treating the natives. We usually went in Seumauatafas surf boat, the station barge which we had brought down from Apia and fixed up. It was manned by 10 fita-fitas as oarsmen and Poti as coxswain, and he was a good one. We generally had to run through the surf at the different villages and Poti's handling of the boat was masterful. On one of our trips we visited Asu on Massacre Bay on the north shore where in 1787 the Capt. of the French ship Astrolabe and six men and the Doctor and three men of the Boussole were massacred by the natives. The French Government erected a monument to them in 1883. The iron fence around it was rather dilapidated, so we sent men over who chipped off the rust and painted it and cleaned up the monument.

The closest escape I ever had from death was on a trip to Anua, a small island about 10 miles up the coast to the east. A chief was very ill up there and the captain told me to take the station barge and visit him. I took my Hospital Apprentice and with Poti as coxswain and 10 fita-fitas, I started. It was raining and blowing very hard. I had on gum boots, a slicker and a south wester, and had an umbrella to keep the rain out of my face. When we got outside the swell on the bar was very high and when we went down into the trough of the sea we could not see Mt. Matafaa, 2500 feet high and only 3 miles away, over the crest of the waves. I told Poti to keep well clear of the land; but the wind and sea set us in toward it. I had my umbrella in front of me and all at once I heard a loud swash. I looked up and there was the surf breaking about 100 feet ahead. I looked to the right and saw a wall of water, which seemed 20 feet high, coming at us. I got Poti to turn the boat head on to it and just as he did it, the surf broke. The boat



seemed to stand on end and I thought it was going over backward; but it went through and we were saved. If it had caught us broadside we would have been swamped and the apprentice and I drowned; but the Samoans, being like fish in the water, would have escaped all right. I then made them pull a mile out to sea before turning up the coast.

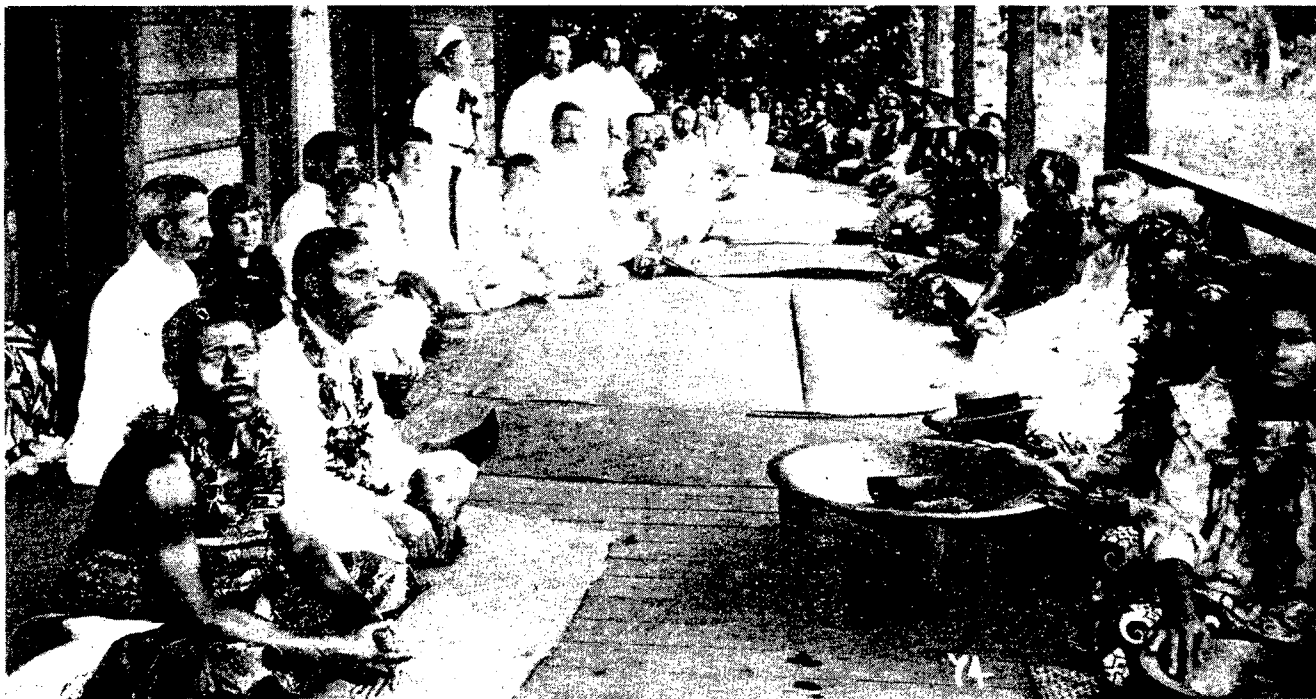
## Chapter 10

### Tri-Partite Government of Samoa by the United States, England and Germany

When we first got to Samoa the English ships Torch and Pylades were stationed there, also the German ships Cormoran and See Adler. The English ships remained until after the division of the Islands. Their men and ours used to fraternize and get along very well; but did not like the Germans. We were very fond of the English officers. The dislike for the Germans dated from the troubles back in 1889. There were the rival factions in the Islands of the supporters of High Chief Maliatoa whom the English and American supported, and Mataafa whom the Germans supported. After the hurricane in 1889 the trouble subsided somewhat; but broke out again in 1898 and 99. In April, 1899, there was quite a battle between the two factions and seven English officers and men and seven American officers and men and a number of Germans were killed. After that a tri-partite government was formed by the three nations, with their consuls at Apia directing affairs. This continued until the division of the Islands was made.

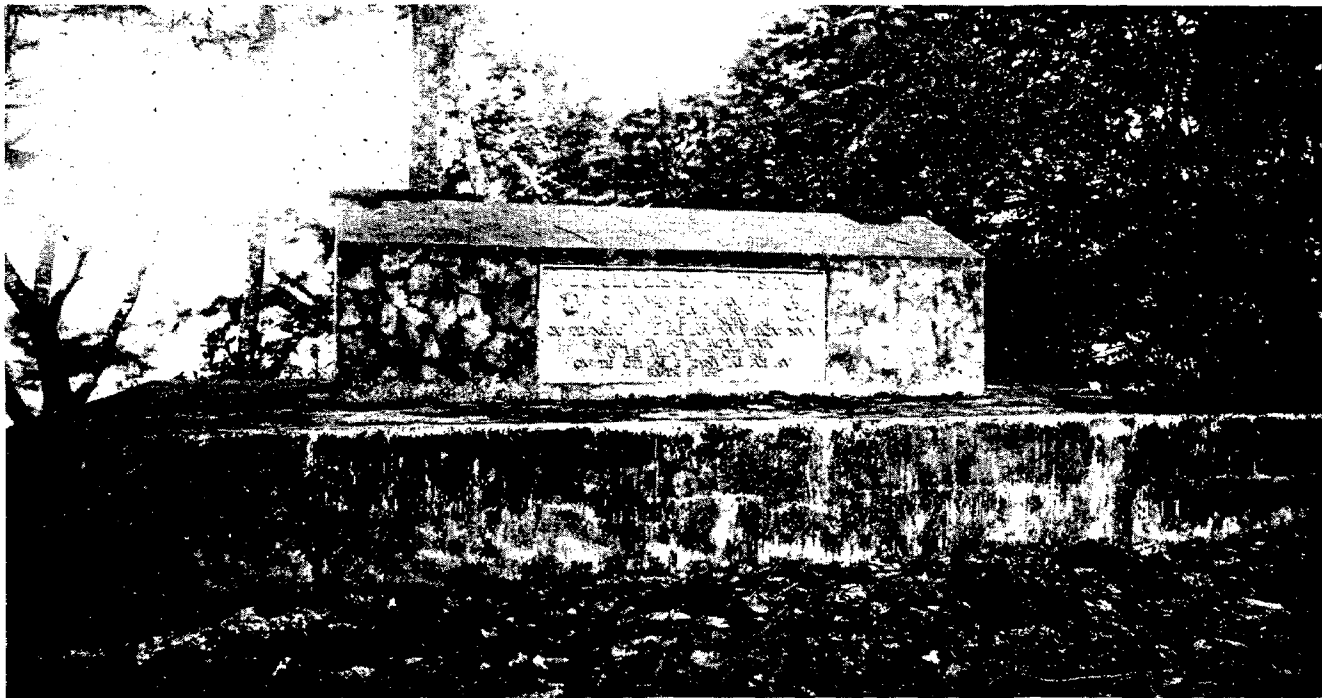
The American and English dead were buried on the Peninsula of Mulinuu to the west of Apia near the Governor's residence. He objected to the location, so they were moved. A Boatswain from one of the English ships was sent in charge of a working party to exhumate the dead and transfer them, while I was sent ashore with the hospital apprentice as sanitary officer. All preparations were completed and we had services for reinternment that afternoon, the English and American officers and men participating. Three volleys were fired and taps were sounded on the bugle.

On May 15, 1901, Mr. and Mrs. Dorn, Stanley



A Kava drinking at Vailima, the home of Robert Louis Stevenson, third white man from the left.





Tomb of Robert Louis Stevenson. Atop Mt. Vaka, above Apia, Samoa



Osborn and I went up to Vailima (Five Waters where five streams meet), the home of Robert Louis Stevenson, about three miles back of Apia in the hills. Every year a cross and a crown of Scotch heather was sent by his aunt from his home in Scotland to Senmanatafa's wife to be placed on his tomb. She was not feeling well that day and gave me the cross and crown to put on the tomb. His tomb is on the top of Mt. Vaka, about 1,000 feet high, overlooking Apia. The house is back of it, about 500 feet below it. After visiting the house we climbed up to the tomb by a zig-zag path. It consists of a slab of concrete about 2 feet thick, 6 feet wide and 10 feet long. On top of this is another slab 4 feet wide, 8 feet long and 5 feet high in which the casket is imbedded. One side is inscribed a poem he wrote:

Under the wide and starry sky  
Dig my grave and let me lie,  
Gladly I've lied, and gladly die,  
And I lay me down with a will.

These be the words ye grave for me,  
"Here he lies where he longed to be;  
Home is the sailor, home from the sea,  
The Hunter's home from the hill."

On the other side there is a passage from Ruth in the Samoan language, "Whither thou goest, I will go, thy people shall be my people and thy God my god."

He was very fond of the Samoans, and they almost worshipped him. His Samoan name was Tusi Tala, write and talk.

## Chapter 11

### We Revisit New Zealand and Return to Pago-Pago

We left Pago-Pago November 22, 1900 and went by Leone to Apia which we left November 28th on our way to New Zealand again for supplies and to have a good time, arriving there December 9th. We took with us Stanley Osborn, the son of the Consul. The Captain also took as his guests Faivai, the Samoan Chief, his daughter Puaa and Tulua, a girl from Apia. The girls made quite a hit in Auckland dancing the Sieva-Sieva at the Consulate and other places. We had an uneventful trip and were glad to see our old friends and acquaintances. Nothing of particular interest happened except that we had such a fine time that we stayed there until March 7, 1901, and would have remained longer if the Navy Department had not ordered us back to Pago-Pago where we arrived the 14th.

The natives were so overjoyed at our return that they gave us a big feast and had something of everything on the Island to eat, among them such delicacies as squid, octopus or devil fish which was as tough as rubber, baked cockroaches about 2 inches long, and live wood or rich worms about 3 inches long. Before we went, Stafford and Richardson said they were going to eat something of everything served and asked me if I would do the same. I told them, "Not on your life." When it came to the worms they balked. I laughed at them and they asked Fapio, the wife of Manga, the Chief, to show them how. She took up a worm, bit its head off, threw back her head, opened her mouth and squeezed the juice down it. Stafford and Richardson went through with it. I asked them how it tasted. They said it tasted sweet like a chestnut worm. They had plenty of good food to pick from. It was served on banana leaves on the floor in a long



house and we sat on the floor around it. The waiters would walk up and down the middle of the table stepping in and out between the food to serve it. If the knife for carving the pork was dull the carver would whet it on the bottom of his bare foot. Food is cooked by heating stones in a hole in the ground, covering them with leaves, placing the food on them, covering with more leaves and then with earth and it is usually cooked very well. All feasts, ceremonies and meetings are preceded by drinking Kava (*piper methistica*) which is a root chewed, grated or pounded up, mixed with water, strained and drunk. Great care must be taken to serve it to the highest rankers first, or tribal war may ensue if a low ranker is served first.

When the Philadelphia came to Pago-Pago with officers and men to relieve those on the Abarenda that were due to return, Lieut. Richardson took some of the officers to a Samoan Kava drinking one night. He instructed the girls, who made the Kava, to chew it up instead of grating it or pounding it. Gaylor, a civil engineer on the works there, who was to do the "tufa" calling out the order in which it was to be served, objected; but Richardson overruled him. When the Philadelphia officers saw how it was made, some of them balked and wanted to leave. Richardson told them it would be a great insult and they might be waylaid and clubbed. When the Kava was made and Gaylor commenced to call the names of those to be served, he called Richardson's first. Richardson had not calculated on drinking any of it; but he had to do it or the show would have failed, so he got what he deserved for playing such a nasty trick.

## **Chapter 12**

### **I Am Detached from the Abarenda and Ordered Home**

The Cruiser Philadelphia arrived on July 13th, with a relief crew for the officers and men. She brought Lieut. Jayne, Ensign Block, Asst. Surgeon Marcour and Asst. Paymaster Goodhue as Stafford, Morris and my reliefs. The mail steamer Sonoma, upon which we took passage to the United States, did not arrive until July 30th. In the meantime I packed up and closed up my affairs, helped Marcour to hold sick call and get on to the routine, took leave of all my friends, and boarded the steamer for home. We had an uneventful trip to Honolulu, arriving there August 6th. The Philadelphia left Pago-Pago July 24th and we found her at Honolulu upon our arrival. Honolulu is a lovely place, and I wish we could have stayed longer to see it. We left the next day and had on board a lot of Hawaiian girls going to school in the United States, and they surely did whoop things up with their dancing hulas and singing. We arrived at San Francisco the 13th after a most delightful trip. I got my baggage, went ashore, got my ticket and had my baggage checked through to Shenandoah Junction, West Virginia, went around the city sightseeing, stayed at the Occidental Hotel that night, and left the next day for home. I arrived in Chicago the 18th, took the B & O for Shenandoah Junction and arrived at Success, my home station, about 7 p.m., no one to meet me and Mary in Washington. Mary came home the next day and we were overjoyed to be united again after nearly three years. We visited my home, Sunny Side, near Warrenton and went to the Pan-American Exposition at Buffalo, New York and visited Niagara Falls while there.

## **Chapter 13**

### **I Am Ordered Back to Samoa As a Witness On a Court Marshall**

On October 2nd I received a telegram to report to the Asst. Secretary of the Navy, Mr. Hackett. When I reported he handed me a letter reporting Capt. Tilley for drunkenness and immorality. I read it and he asked me if it were true. I told him it was as to drunkenness; but I did not know about the immorality. The name of the sender was erased; but a personal friend of Secretary Long said he would vouch for the reliability of the party. He asked me if I knew the party. I said I did. He asked me the name. I refused to give it unless ordered. He called his aide, a Naval Officer, and asked him could I be forced to give the name and was told that I could but it would be unlawful to order me to do so. I was excused and ordered to proceed back home.

On the 9th of October I received orders to proceed to Mare Island, California and take passage on the U.S.S. Solace for Tutuila Samoa as a witness at a court martial. I arrived at Mare Island and reported aboard the Solace the 18th. Yancey Williams was there and I took dinner with him on the Ranger. We went down to San Francisco and I went to see Mr. Tibbets, the contractor. He said, "Doctor, when you get to Pago-Pago, you see John Leonard and tell him I don't want him or any of our men to have anything to do with Capt. Tilley's trial. I do a lot of work for the Navy and it might injure me by getting mixed up in this. Admiral Robley D. Evans, the President of the Court, and other members came aboard the Solace for the trip.

We left for Samoa October 21st and arrived at Honolulu the 28th. There I met with Mr. and Mrs. Dorn on the Steamer Ventura. He had been invalided home and said he was sorry he had to leave before the

trial. The Sonoma arrived from San Francisco and Capt. Tilley and his wife were aboard enroute to Pago-Pago for the trial. We left Honolulu October 31st and arrived at Pago-Pago November 7th. The Battleship Wisconsin was there and I was ordered to report to the Admiral, which I did, and told him what I knew about the case. Capt. and Mrs. Tilley were at the cottage with the Hudsons and he sent word he would like to see me, so I went to see him. I told them I would have to testify that he was drunk but could not testify that he was immoral. He said that being a teetotaler, I was biased. I went to Leonard and gave him Tibbett's message. He said he had seen the Admiral and the men had; but that he would tell the Admiral he would refuse to testify or let the men testify.

The trial began on the 9th and ended on the 14th. Capt. Tilley was cleared, I being the only one to testify against him, all the other witnesses who caroused with him testified for him and, as the saying goes, "Dog won't eat dog." When John Leonard heard how the case was going, he came to me and said, "Doctor, you have been a good friend of ours and if your testimony is going to compromise you in any way, I will go over and testify and take all the men over and we have undisputable evidence. I told him that the Court could not do anything to me and they would be glad to let the matter drop. The men on the Wisconsin got up a doggerel to the tune of "Just Because She Made Those Goo-Goo Eyes, that they would sing on the sly—

Just because they said he hit the booze,  
They sent us on a ten-thousand mile cruise.  
The court it didn't think that he ever took a  
drink,  
And so they proved he never hit the booze.

The Solace left Pago-Pago November 16th for Honolulu, arriving there the 24th. I stayed aboard

the Solace until the 28th, when she left for Manilla and I went ashore to the Royal Hawaiian Hotel to wait for the mail steamer to get back to San Francisco. The Alameda got in on December 4th. I got aboard with some patients for the Mare Island Hospital and we pulled out about 4 p.m., and reached San Francisco on December 10th. I got home about the 15th, spent the Christmas holidays there and was then ordered to duty on the Receiving Ship Columbia at the New York Navy Yard. Capt. Snow commanded and Philip Leach was the senior surgeon. Chief Engineer Hayes was on duty at the Yard, and Mary and I got rooms and board at the same house with him and his family in Brooklyn just outside the gate. While there, I used to attend clinics at different hospitals whenever practicable.

I had very pleasant duty on the Receiving Ship and we had opportunities to visit New York, Coney Island and go to the theaters and other amusements, as I was off duty every other afternoon. We enjoyed visiting Prospect Park in Brooklyn and boating on the lakes there. I went to New London, Connecticut as the medical officer for the trial trip of the Monitor Nevada. I also went to Washington in 1903 to take the examination for promotion to Passed Assistant Surgeon, which I passed successfully.

I saw a good deal of Dr. Will Thomas who joined the Navy for the Spanish American War and served with me on the U.S.S. Vulcan, when that ship was ordered back to the West Indies to salvage the Spanish Flag Ship "Maria Theresa," which we had to abandon in a storm and it had drifted ashore on Cat Island. Thomas had resigned and was chief of a clinic in St. Luke's Hospital. I also met a Doctor Gallant who was on the staff of the Roosevelt Hospital and I got him to join the Navy as a reserve medical officer.

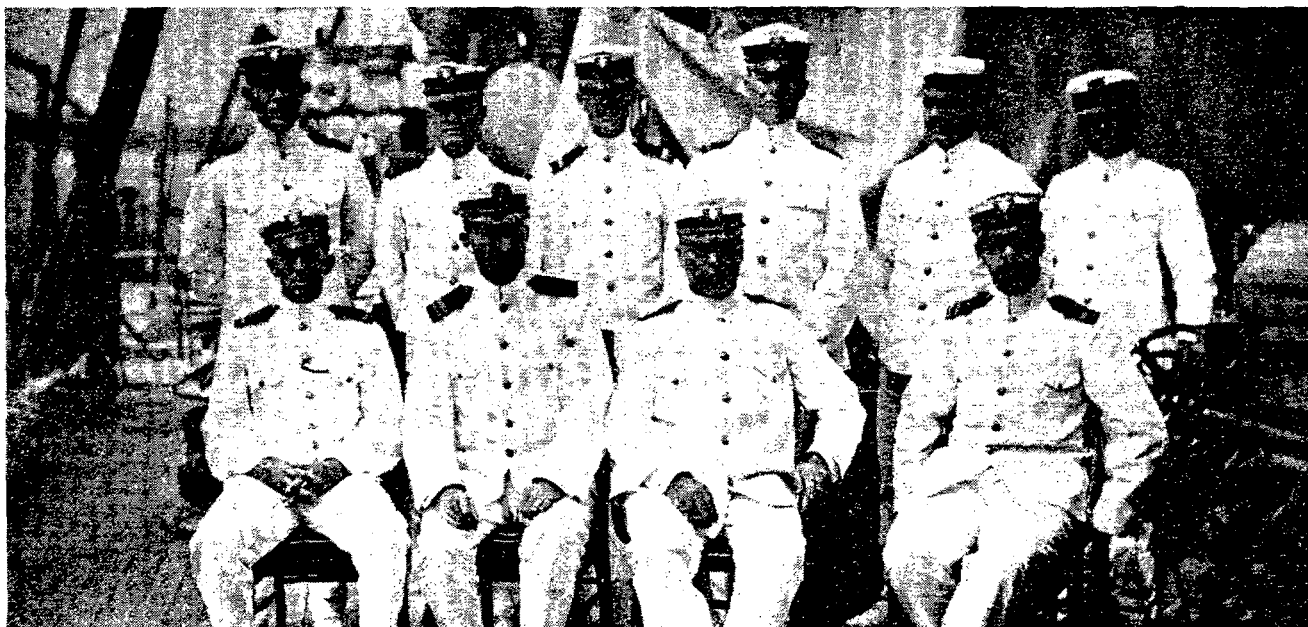
## Chapter 14

### Cruise of the Castine to South America

In 1903 I was promoted to Passed Assistant Surgeon and that fall I was ordered to the Gun Boat Castine fitting out at the Navy Yard Philadelphia. The officers were Comdr. Austin Knight, Exec. Lt. Geo. Logan, Watch Officers Ensigns Herbert Sparrow, Geo. Neal, Guy Whitlock, Rufus Togbaum, Paymaster Henry Wise. The President, Theodore Roosevelt, had taken part of the Isthmus of Panama from Columbia to build the Canal and we were ordered to Colon, the Caribbean entrance to it. We arrived there December 27th and found things quiet, although a few days before a landing force from the Nashville came near having a fight with the Columbians. Our duties were to guard the coast from Colon to the Columbian border and we were stationed in Caledonia Bay 5 miles above the border, where there was a camp of 5,000 Columbians. There were three Indian villages on shores of the bay with 1,500 people and 900 canoes, and the Chief was a Colonel in the Columbian Army. We thought we might be attacked any night, so we kept amunition on deck and the gun crews slept at the guns. The Paymaster and I each took a night watch to relieve the watch officers.

We made running surveys of the coast in our steam launch, I would chart the positions as the line officers called out the courses and positions. We went to Colon every two weeks to report. The passage up there and back was generally very rough, and I correspondingly miserable, so I composed a song "On the U.S.S. Castine" to the tune of "In the Good Old Summer Time."

There's a ship on the sea, Lord deliver me  
From the U. S. S. Castine.  
She'll pitch and she'll roll. And you'll lose your soul  
On the U. S. S. Castine.



OFFICERS OF THE U. S. S. CASTINE

Seated, left to right: Ens. Zogbaum, P. A. Surg. Blackwell, Capt. Dorn, Lieut. Logan, Executive Officer. Standing: Ens. Neal, Ens. Thompson, P. A. Paymr. Wise, Ens. Whitlock, Bos'n. Derrington, Gunner McCarthy.





When you think you're in clover, she'll almost roll over  
Without one bit of a sign.  
Then you grab for the table. Or whatever you are able  
On the U. S. S. Castine.

### CHORUS

On the U. S. S. Castine. On the U. S. S. Castine  
Sailing down the Spanish Main. On the raging brine  
You grab your sides and make for the rail. And have a  
deuce of a time  
Keeping down your liver and lights, On the U. S. S.  
Castine.

\* \* \* \* \*

At night on the deep, When you'd like to have sleep  
On the U. S. S. Castine  
You go down below. And you get sick and sore  
On the U. S. S. Castine.  
When the odor and smell, Like the brimstone from  
Hell  
From the hatch of the steering engine  
Comes into your room. Then you cuss and you fume  
On the U. S. S. Castine.

We visited Porto Bella 12 miles east of Colon. It used to be the eastern terminus of the road across the Isthmus in Spanish days and the old forts and guns were still there. We went down the coast from Caledonia Bay February 15th to observe the Columbian camp of which I made a sketch from the deck. We anchored in the Gulf of Darien that night and returned to Caledonia Bay the next day. On February 24th we went to Chiriqui Lagoon, 20 miles north of Colon, for target practice and remained there until March 13th, when we returned to Colon and Caledonia Bay. We remained on patrol duty until March 24th, when we left for Pensacola, Florida, where we arrived March 30th and found the North Atlantic Fleet and the European Squadron in port for target

practice outside. We went into dry dock for repairs. Mary arrived on April 6th and we established ourselves at a boarding house called "Winter Rest." We had target practice and for a while alternated with the Scorpion carrying mail and provisions to the fleet outside. A serious explosion happened in a gun turret on the Missouri on April 13th, five officers and 29 men were killed.

Commander E. J. Dorn arrived and relieved Comdr. Knight as Captain on April 20th. Mary left April 28th to visit her sisters in Atlanta, Georgia. On the 29th we got orders from the Admiral to go to Logger Head Key at Fort Jefferson, Key West and pull the Collier Caesar off the reef; but when we got there, she had gotten off. We then headed for Guantanamo Bay, Cuba, went down the Bahama Channel, rounded the east end of Cuba, and arrived at the Bay May 4th. On May 7th, the Dolphin came in with the Secretary of the Navy and several Senators aboard on a junketing trip to inspect the station. We left for San Juan Porto Rico May 10th and arrived there May 12th. Sparrow was detached from the ship and Midshipman R. S. Thompson relieved him. Here we joined the European squadron consisting of the Brooklyn Flagship of Admiral Chadwick, Capt. Hawkins in Command of it, the Atlanta, (Com'dr. Qualtrough) the Marietta, (Comdr. Morelle) and the Castine (Comdr. Dorn). We coaled and took on stores and left May 14th for Gibraltar.

## Chapter 15

### **The Cruise of the Castine to Europe and Africa**

Our itinerary was to be through the Mediterranean Sea, the Suez Canal, the Red Sea, down the east coast of Africa, stopping at the Seychelle Islands, around the Cape of Good Hope to Cape Town, from there to St. Helena and across the Atlantic to South America and up the east coast to meet the Fleet at Guantanamo Bay for winter target practice. Although we took a deck load of coal in bags, when we arrived at Santa Cruz Canary Islands May 27th we only had 10 tons of coal in our bunkers. We made slow progress because the Marietta had engine trouble and had to be towed by the Brooklyn most of the way. When we arrived at Santa Cruz, the Admiral got a cable from the Navy Department saying to proceed at once to Tangier, Morocco to protect American interests. We took on 150 tons of coal and pulled out for Tangier. While coaling, I took a drive up to Laguna, a summer resort on a plateau about 2,000 feet above the sea level. The view was grand and the Teneriffes 12,180 feet high covered with snow towered above us. We left that evening and reached Tangier about 6 p.m., May 30th.

We found that an American citizen, Perdicaris and his daughter had been captured by a Moroccan bandit, Raisuli, and held for ransom. Perdicaris was a wealthy man; but never had been to the United States. He was born in the American Consulate at Smyrna Asia Minor, which made him an American citizen. Raisuli demanded that the authorities release all prisoners of the tribesmen, discharge certain governors and pay \$70,000 ransom. The Olympia, Baltimore and Cleveland got in June 2nd and the two Admirals and the Consuls negotiated with Raisuli. I never heard the full result of the negotiations; but

certain tribesmen were released, certain governors dismissed and a small ransom paid and Perdicaris and daughter were released the 25th.

We went ashore to see the city and saw the Arab in all his squalor. The streets were narrow and dirty, too narrow for vehicles and on some of them two donkeys could not pass with their loads and all had to go one way. When we got ashore a crowd would surround us and we could not get rid of them until we employed a stout fellow as a guide and he kept the others away by pommeling them. There are hundreds of beggars. There are some nice houses in the outskirts owned by Sheiks and others. A Sheik on horseback in his gaudy flowing raiment is quite a showy spectacle. We got horses and rode out into the edge of the desert. We crossed a small river on a stone bridge in good repair said to have been built by Julius Caesar. We met several caravans of camels coming to town.

The North Atlantic Squadron the Kearsarge, Alabama, Maine and Iowa passed through the Strait the 20th for a cruise in the Mediterranean. We went to Gibraltar on the 22nd and the Battleship Missouri arrived on the 23rd. We returned to Tangier the 24th; but went back to Gibraltar on the 27th.

Gibraltar is a wonderful Rock. It is about half a mile wide, two miles long and 1,396 feet high. It is honey-combed with galleries and has gun emplacements on all sides and about the only way to take it is to starve it out. We enjoyed going around the town and over the Rock where we were allowed. Several of us got horses and rode out into the country and met with several adventures. As we had been delayed about a month by the Perdicaris affair, we did not have time to make the Cruise through the Mediterranean and Red Seas and around Africa and get back to Cuba for winter practice, and it was decided to go down the west coast of Africa to Cape Town.

We left Gibraltar June 30th and arrived at Santa

Cruz, Canary Islands, July 9th, and had a very pleasant stay there. When we were there a month before, they were harvesting wheat on the shore and a month later they were harvesting on the plateau 2,000 feet above. Capt. Dorn and I took a trip up on the plateau and spent the night at Orotava a summer resort on the north coast. I was awakened in the morning by bellowing and bleating and looked out the window and saw a man milking a cow and with a herd of goats was delivering milk to his customers. They were cutting wheat with sickles or reap hooks; but I saw one old fashion cradle. They still had threshing floors where the wheat was treaded out by leading cattle and horses around on it and then winnowing it by holding it up and letting the wind blow the chaff away.

We left Santa Cruz and went to Las Palmas on Gran Canary Island 50 miles south and stayed there until July 15th and had a very pleasant stay driving around the country. The Brooklyn came in shortly before we left there and commenced coaling. We got under way and arrived off Cape Barbas Africa the 17th, where we were to meet the Brooklyn; but as she did not appear the Capt. of the Atlanta decided to go on to Sierra-Leone; but in a short while he signaled us to go on half speed while he went back to meet the Brooklyn. He did not find the Brooklyn so he rejoined us on the 18th. We sighted the Brooklyn at 6:30 a.m. the 22nd and we all arrived in Free Town, Sierra-Leone about 8:30 p.m. The Brooklyn got to Cape Barbas shortly after we left, waited a while and went on to Cape Blanco and waited all day the 20th.

Free Town is a low, swampy place. The English have a garrison of 2,000 men there. I got a small elephant tusk there out of which I carved a number of things. We left there the 24th and arrived at Monrovia Liberia on the 26th. Liberia was a colony of free blacks established in 1822 by the American Colonization Society, an Abolitionist Society of New Jersey. A great many blacks from the interior were there cele-

brating and making demands on the government, and our arrival there was very timely in curbing any disturbance. We had to land through the swell and surf and we got natives known as Krumen, who were very expert in the surf, to handle the boats. President Barclay, a Negro, was the Governor. They did not show much progress and the town of about 5,000 was in quite an unsanitary condition.

We left Monrovia the 26th and arrived at St. Paul de Loanda Angola, a Portuguese Colony, August 4th. On July 30th we crossed the Equator in longitude  $0^{\circ} - 34'$  West, so we were practically in no degree latitude and no degree longitude, so it would appear that we were "no where." There is a great ceremony whenever a ship crosses the equator. King Neptune sends his herald aboard and announces to the Captain that *he will come aboard when it crosses the line*. He comes aboard with his trident Admiral Davy Jones and court and they proceed to initiate all who have not crossed it. The ceremony usually consists of lathering the faces with soap and grease and shaving with a wooden razor, dumping them into a tank of water to be washed off. You can only get off by treating the King and court with beer, cigars or cigarettes or some delicacy. We coaled ship at St. Paul de Loanda and left there August 6th for Cape Town, South Africa. We sighted Table Mountain back of Cape Town August 14th at 6 a.m., and anchored there at 2 p.m.

Table Bay is open to the sea and there is a heavy swell there nearly all the time. The ships had to go into the mole to be comfortable. The City extends for quite a distance along the beach. It is a very picturesque city with Table Mountain as background. I found that the Salmons whom I knew in Auckland had come to Cape Town and I enjoyed meeting and being with them a great deal. The city gave the officers a trip to Kimberly and Praetoria to visit the gold and diamond mines and about half of them went and had a great

time. The Americans in Cape Town gave us a nice outing. There were about 60 in the party and we drove out in coaches through the hills to Rondebush and to Grute Shur, Cecil Rhodes estate. We had lunch at the Royal Hotel on Houts Bay and had a most enjoyable day. I went to Simon Town on False Bay to see the Cape of Good Hope and the big waves I had read about in Maury's Physical Geography. I saw them, all right. The old British battleship, Simoom, was in dry dock for repairs and was going around the cape to Simon Town, her station. I tried to get permission to go around on her; but could not see the Captain. I saw her when she went out and was glad I had not gotten permission to go on her, as she rolled her decks under and I thought surely she would capsize. She and her sister ship, the Captain, were about the first British battleships built. The Captain was cruising one dark night with the fleet in a storm in the Bay of Biscay. All at once her lights disappeared and she was never seen or heard of again. It is supposed she capsized and went down with all on board.

While in Cape Town, we were entertained by the officers of the Simoom and of the Castle at the Army barracks. One of our officers, whom we had dubbed "Little Jim" and who was rather abstemious, got too much on board at the Castle and when he got back to the ship we joked him a lot and resolved to get even with the "Britishers" for it. We invited them to dinner and after we had gotten some of them pretty well "soaked," I sang a doggerel I had composed "Just Because They Soaked Our Little Jim" to the tune of "Just Because She Made Them Goo-Goo Eyes."

### Just Because They Soaked Our "Little Jim" ~

The Castine sent an officer one evening out to dine  
He got up to the Castle just at seven forty-nine  
And waded in with a goodly "smile."

He started in to lap up rum and drank most every  
kind  
But when he got back to the ship he wasn't feeling  
fine  
And he lost his "rep" for quite a while.

### Chorus

Just because they soaked our "Little Jim"  
We are going to fill them right up to the brim.  
We'll put them on the floor and we'll make them sick  
and sore  
Just because they soaked our "Little Jim".

The soldiers from the Castle, the lads from the Simoom  
Came down upon the Castine and right there they met  
their doom.

We filled them up in proper style  
They started in on cocktails and other kinds of rum  
But before the night was over we had put them on  
the "bum"  
And laid them out for quite a while.

### Chorus

Just because they soaked our "Little Jim."  
We surely filled them right up to the brim.  
We played the "Razor Jig" and we made their heads  
quite big  
Just because they soaked our "Little Jim."



## Chapter 16

### Cruise of the Castine to South America

We left Cape Town September 3rd and headed for St. Helena and reached Jamestown on the north coast September 11th. There is only an open roadstead for anchoring and it is difficult to land at the wharf. Jamestown is in a gulch with cliffs 4 to 5 hundred feet high on each side. A stairway of 800 steps hewn out of the stone goes up on one side to the plateau. We visited Longwood, Napoleon's residence on the Island and Geranium Valley where he was buried and "The Briars" where he lived until Longwood was built for him. The Island is 12 miles long and 6 or 8 wide and very mountainous, Diana's Peak being nearly 3,000 feet high. The coast is very abrupt and there is only one small sand beach on the south side. We had a very lovely visit at St. Helena. The Marsdens who lived at "The Briars" invited me to lunch. We were entertained by the Governor at his residence "The Plantation" on a plateau about 1,500 feet above the sea level. On this plateau about 4,000 Boer prisoners were encamped during the Boer War and Gen. Cronge's cottage was still preserved there.

When Napoleon was imprisoned at St. Helena, the Governor was ordered to see him every day to be sure that he had not escaped; but Napoleon did everything he could to prevent his seeing him. When the Governor would call at Longwood he would be taking a bath or sick in bed and the Governor would have to wait a long time and often would not see him at all. Napoleon had holes cut in the blinds so he could look at the troops drilling on the parade grounds, a short distance in front of Longwood, without being seen.

We left St. Helena September 20th and headed for Santos Brazil, arriving there October 1st. Coffee

is the chief export, as it is the port of Sao Paulo the great coffee section of Brazil about 40 miles away. The Captain and I went up there one day and on a part of the road the cars had to be pulled up the mountain by cable. It is a very beautiful city. We went through the coffee plantations and saw great piles of it on the ground. They export over 6 million bags of coffee annually from Santos. We left Santos October 5th for Montevideo Uruguay, arriving there the 9th.

On the 11th we went up to Buenos Aires, Argentina to be present at the Inauguration of President Quintana on the 12th. The Admiral and his staff went aboard the Atlanta for the trip as the ships had to go into the docks and there was not room for the Brooklyn. We attended the Inauguration in full dress and it was a very colorful affair. An electric light exploded during the ceremony and almost caused a stampede as they thought it might be the starting of an insurrection. Buenos Aires is a beautiful city and compares most favorably with our best. Avenue Florida is the fashionable street with parking and beautiful flowers in the center. The people go up one side and down the other in fine carriages bowing and saluting friends as they meet. We went to the races and various receptions and had a fine time while there.

We returned to Montevideo on the 18th and left there October 29th for Ilha Grande Bay, Brazil, arriving there November 2nd. We had target practice there and then left for Rio Janeiro the 12th, arriving there the 13th. As there were epidemics of babonic plague, yellow fever and small pox and an insurrection, brought on by compulsory vaccination had just been put down, the officers only were allowed to go ashore in the daytime and then only to certain sections. Every light in the city had been smashed by the insurrectionists and it was in darkness. It is a beautiful city and has the most beautiful surround-

ings I have ever seen. We left for Ilha Grande the 16th and arrived there the 17th where we found the other ships at target practice. As a precaution, I vaccinated all the crew. We returned to Rio the 23rd and the Captain and I went up Corcovada, a mountain 2,000 feet high back of the city and had a beautiful view of the city and surrounding country.

We left Rio for Bahia the 25th; but were ordered to go to Pernambuco or Recife further on to look for a shoal while the other ships went to Bahia for a good time, our ship being the junior ship, had to do the "dirty work." We arrived at Pernambuco December 1st and commenced sounding for the reef. We went up and down the coast and criss-crossed in every way but could find no reef. The Captain who reported it had evidently gotten too close in shore and to "save his face" had reported an uncharted shoal farther out. It is the hottest place we ever struck, ice 25 cents a pound. The rest of the ships came by on the 5th and we joined them and proceeded to the Port of Spain on Trinidad Island at the mouth of the Orinoca River, Venezuela, arriving there December 14th and we remained there till January 8th and had a most delightful time.

We were entertained royally. We went to the Governor Lord and Lady Jackson's annual ball for the inhabitants and saw more Negroes than whites dancing. There is a leper hospital on the road just out of the city and the lepers are allowed to go out on the road and beg. We visited the Pitch Lake in the southern part of the Island where millions of tons have been dug out of it, but it still keeps its level. While at the Port of Spain four of us went alligator hunting up the Carino River. We saw lots of them. I got two, and the rest got one a piece. We skinned them and tried to cure the skins; but they smelled so the Captain made us throw them overboard. We had a most delightful time. The Castine was ordered to leave for San Juan, Porto

Rico on the 8th. We had had such a good time that the younger officers did not want to leave at all and asked me to write them a song about it, which I did to the tune of "In the Good Old Shmmer Time."

### **In The Good Old Port of Spain**

There's an isle in the Sea, And on it the City  
Of the good ole Port of Spain.  
While there on our cruise, We drank lots of booze,  
In the good old Port of Spain.  
We had parties and balls, And tea-fights and calls  
And we all want to go there again,  
To see the dear girls, Those Antillean pearls,  
In the good old Port of Spain.

### **Chorus**

In the good old Port of Spain, In the good old Port of  
Spain  
On the lovely Isle of Trinidad, Just off the  
Spanish Main  
The girls there are as sweet as can be, And we all want  
to go there again  
And have another jolly good time, In the good  
old Port of Spain.

There's Dolly a dear Who has not a peer  
In the good old Port of Spain.  
And Emmie's the peach Of all on the beach  
In the good old Port of Spain.  
They with Cora and Stella, Bridgidita and Ella  
Are all at the same old game  
Of leading us on And then throwing us down  
In the good old Port of Spain.

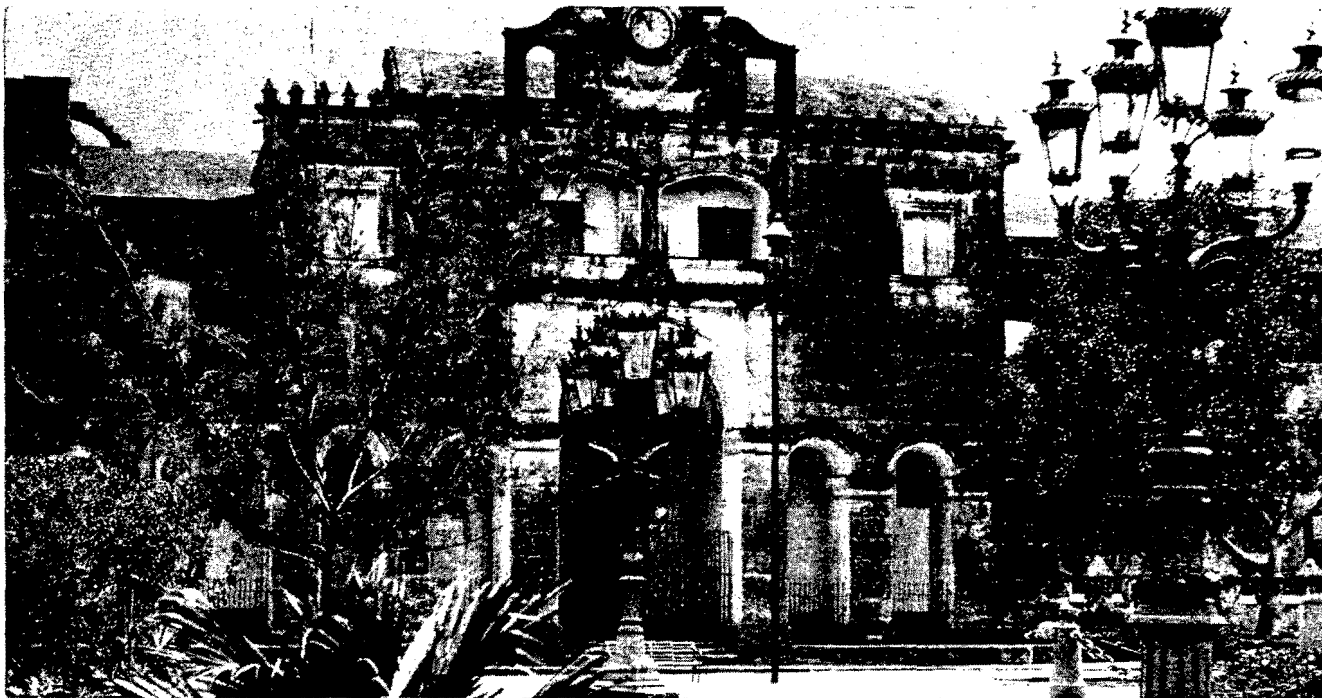
## Chapter 17

### Duty in the West Indies

We left for San Juan P. R. and arrived there January 10th. The mail steamer got in the 12th and brought Comdr. Dillingham as a special Envoy to San Domingo, so we left the same day and took him over there, arriving there the next day. There had been some political trouble. San Domingo owed Italy and Germany big debts and they were making demands and Dillingham was ordered there to straighten them out and we were to remain there until he did. Mr. Dawson was the Consul and lived outside the City and he and his wife were very nice to us. Mrs. Dorn came down and stayed with them. The City is walled and rather medieval. The houses are concrete. The Cathedral is said to contain the true remains of Christopher Columbus, which I saw, as the casket is opened for the public one day every year. It is claimed that the Spaniards removed his remains to Havana in 1795 and then to Spain in 1898 after the Spanish-American War; but the Priest at the Cathedral says they removed the remains of his brother or his son Diego instead. From inscriptions found on the casket and inside of it, the remains are undoubtedly those of Christopher Columbus. Workmen making repairs on the Cathedral in 1877 discovered several caskets. On the outside of the lid of one of them was inscribed "D. de la A. Per. Ate," meaning "Discoverer of America, First Admiral." On the inside of the lid was inscribed "Illtre y Esdo Varon Dn. Cristoval Colon," meaning "Illustrious and Famous Baron Christopher Columbus." There was also found a bullet which he was known to have carried in his body and some loose screws and a plate on which was inscribed "Cristoval Colon." This casket was examined by State Officials and the Spanish Consul at that time.

Morales was President and it was due in great part to him that the tyrant Herreaux was disposed of some years before. Herreaux was a very black *negro* and a horse and mule thief operating between San Domingo and Haiti. He collected a considerable following and one day he appeared unexpectedly before San Domingo City with 2,000 men and took the city and ruled them with an iron hand for 12 years.

There were many plots to kill him; but he found them all out and killed the conspirators. Finally 12 men conspired to kill him and Morales, 18 years old, was one of them. They drew lots as to who was to kill him and Morales was the one. An older man went to him and told him he was young and inexperienced and he had better let him do the job. Morales said, no, that Herreaux had killed his father and he was going to kill Herreaux; but he could help. Herreaux was at Macorice, about 25 miles to the east, and they went after him. They found him a butcher shop and waited around a corner for him to come out. He came out, and a beggar asked him for alms as they opened on him with guns. In trying to return their fire, Herreaux killed the beggar and they killed Herreaux. To show how he was hated, a troop of cavalry was up the street and came galloping down. When they saw Herreaux dead, each one of them emptied his revolver into him as they passed.



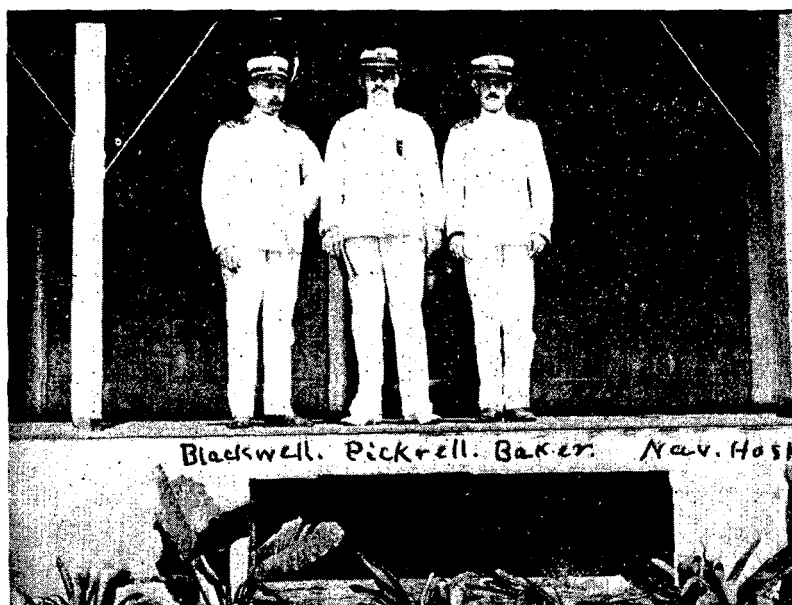
The Cathedral of San Domingo City, W. I., Tomb of Christopher Columbus.







Dr. and Mrs. Blackwell having tea in their quarters, San Juan, P. R.



Dr. Blackwell, Dr. Pickrell (Commanding) and Dr. Baker on the porch of the Naval Hospital, San Juan, P. R.



## Chapter 18

### Duty at the Naval Hospital, San Juan

When we were at San Juan, Passed Asst. Surgeon C. S. Butler at the Naval Hospital wanted to exchange duties with me so we wrote to the Surgeon General and he approved of it. We made cruises to different parts of the Island and on April 16th went to St. Thomas in the Danish West Indies. We went to San Juan April 23, 1905. Dr. Butler relieved me and I reported to Surgeon George Pickrell at the Naval Hospital for duty and found Asst. Surgeon M. W. Baker there on duty. We alternated duty which gave each of us every other afternoon off. I was licensed to practice medicine in Porto Rico and did considerable practice when off duty. Shortly after I got to the hospital, Morales, the President of San Domingo, arrived there as a patient. He had been deposed and in escaping from San Domingo City, he had fallen over a cliff and broken a leg and laid there a couple of days until he was found by some of his adherents and brought to San Juan.

Capt. Andrew Dunlap was Commandant at the Naval Station. I got quarters at the Las Palmas boarding house and sent for Mary to join me. I finally secured an apartment in the Eureka Apartments in San Turce opposite the Union Club where we took our meals. Mary joined me about the middle of May and we spent two very pleasant years in Porto Rico. There was the Army Post there and a good many Americans and we made some very pleasant acquaintances. We joined the Country Club on the beach and enjoyed bathing. We took a trip by coach through the Island stopping at El Caye with Major and Mrs. Griffith and Coamo Springs and Ponce on the south coast, then across the Island to Arecibo and back to San Juan. It was a fine trip. Dr. Baker was detached in the fall

and Dr. Butler came back to relieve him. Dr. Pickrell was taken sick in the summer of 1906 and had to be invalided home and he was relieved by Surgeon Charles F. Stokes. That fall President Theodore Roosevelt visited the Island, landing at Ponce on the the south coast, and nearly all the officials at San Juan went there to meet him and they formed quite a motorcade to accompany him across the Island. There was a big reception given him by Governor Winthrop at the Mansion, which we attended.

## Chapter 19

### Duty at the Naval Academy, Annapolis, Maryland

Mary had to go home in November, 1906 on account of illness of her mother and I was detached December 15th and went home and to the Naval Academy in January, 1907. Mary came later and we boarded at a Mrs. McMackin outside the gate. In the fall we moved into a house next to our best friends, Yancey and Maud Williams. In the spring of 1908 I attended the Navay Medical School in Washington, after which I was promoted to Surgeon with the rank of Lt. Comdr. We had Mary's niece, Lorena Conrad, with us to go to school in Annapolis. In 1909 I went on the Midshipmen's Cruise on the Chicago, Capt. Bullard commanding and Lt. Comdr. Chas. Preston Executive. We cruised along the New England coast, Mary and other officers' wives following us and we had a very enjoyable cruise.

I had a very extraordinary experience at the Academy. We had two girls visiting us and had invited two Midshipmen to dinner Christmas day. My niece in the country had promised us a turkey. It had not arrived the day before and Mary told me I would have to go out in town and get one. I went to the express office first and did not find anything. There was a room 20 feet square piled to the ceiling with boxes for the Midshipmen and only room to walk around it next to the walls. I went down town; but there was not a turkey in town. At one store, there was a 10 pound hen and I came near getting that; but decided to go to the express office again. Two more cars laden with boxes had gotten in and they were unloading them. I knew it would take them a hour or two to unload, so I decided to go and buy the hen. Just as I started down a long platform a trolley car came up and stopped. The conductor got off and came up the platform and as he

got opposite the end of the last car he got up on its platform, found a glass broken in the door and reached in and pulled out a package. He came up the platform yelling, "Oh, I got a turk for Christmas." As we met, I said "Whose is it?"; he held it up to the light and said, "Dr. E. M. Blackwell." I said, "That is just what I am looking for." Now, that seemed to me more than a coincidence and I was inclined to believe that the "Hard Shell" Baptists, whom they say believe that what is to be is going to be, whether it happens or not, were just right. I just had to get that turkey and it was evidently intended that I should get it and everything had to be timed to a nicety to get it. First the trip to the express office, (2) then the trip down town, (3) then back to the express office, (4) the two extra cars had to be there, (5) then the trolley had to come, (6) the conductor had to get off, (7) walk up the platform, (8) get up on the platform of the car. (9) A glass had to be broken in the door, (10) the turkey had to be lying next to it, (11) he had to reach in and pull it out and (12) get down just in time to meet me. (13) and yell "Oh! I got a turk for Christmas."

## Chapter 20

### Cruise on the Hospital Ship Solace

When we returned to Annapolis in the fall from the cruise, I was ordered to the Hospital Ship Solace, fitting out at the Charleston, South Carolina Navy Yard. Medical Inspector George Pickrell was in Command, Surgeon R. C. Holcomb Executive Surgeon, I in charge of the Medical Division, Passed Asst. Surgeon E. A. Vickery in charge of the Surgical Division and Asst. Surgeons J. R. Phelps, L. M. Schmidt and G. F. Clark assistants, and Mr. Pearson, Pharmacist, and 60 Hospital Corpsmen. The navigation and handling of the ship was under the Sailing Master, Capt. Finke of the Merchant Service.

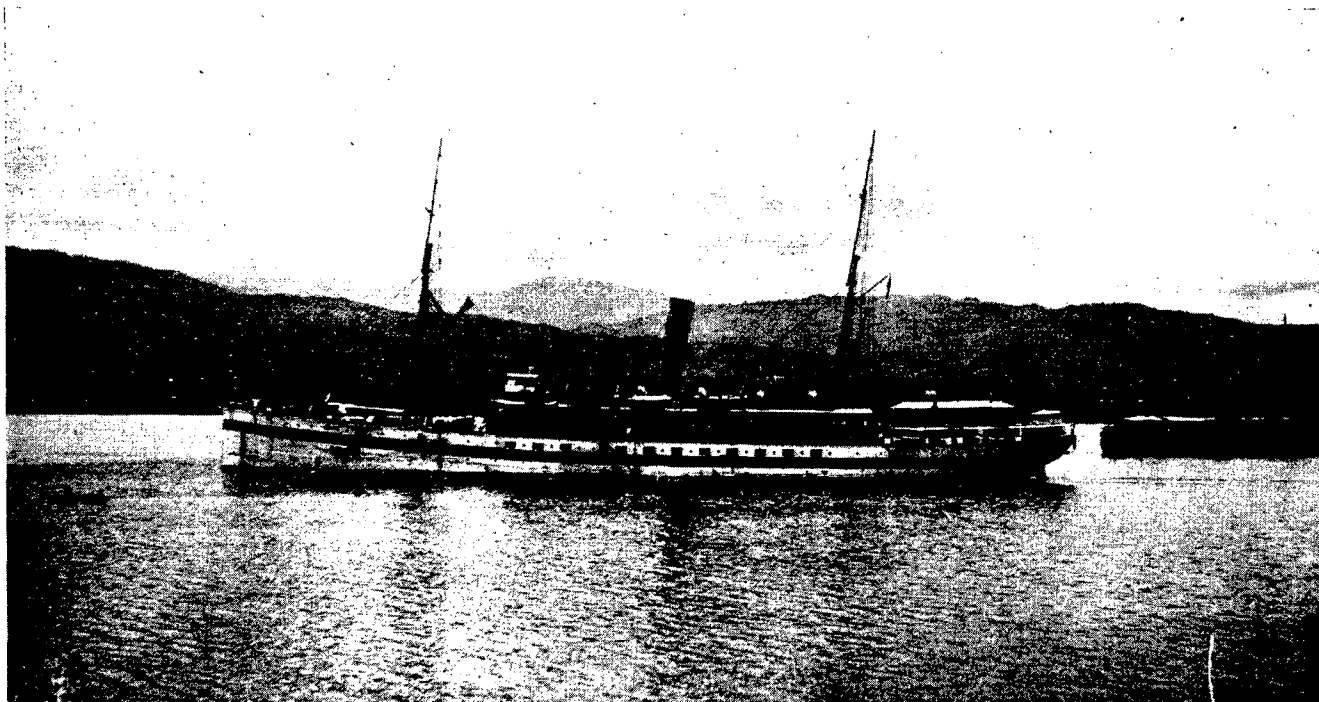
Before I joined the Solace, I had my niece, Mildred Hinman, vaccinated against typhoid fever. I got 100 doses of anti-typhoid serum from Maj. F. F. Russell, M. C. U.S.A. When we arrived in Guantanamo Bay, Cuba we gave it to the officers and men as long as it lasted. This was the first that was given in the Navy. The next year we had an abundant supply and gave it to all who wanted it. The next year it was made compulsory to take it, and the good results were shown by the fact that before that there were about 500 cases in the Navy annually of typhoid fever, which was reduced to 15 or 20 annually afterwards.

We left Charleston in the fall of 1909 and went to Massachusetts Bay off Provincetown to await the arrival of the fleet which came in due course of time. We went to New York with the fleet and spent the Christmas holidays there and early in January left for Guantanamo Bay for the winter practice and maneuvers. It was soon evident that the Solace needed a good many changes in her arrangements. I made notes and drew up plans for the changes. When we went north in the spring of 1910, the C. O. took the plans

and submitted them to the Bureau of Medicine and Surgery and they were approved and we were ordered to the Navy Yard, Charleston, South Carolina, to have the changes made. The Commissary and feeding of the Hospital Corps and patients had been in charge of the Sailing Master and it was not at all satisfactory and the Commanding Officer had taken over the medical department's part of it. I was appointed commissary officer in addition to my other duties and had to take stock of all provisions on board and divide up between the crew and medical department and it was some job. A board was appointed to inquire into the matter and make recommendations. Paymaster Sam McGowan was Chairman and approved of the action the C. O. had taken and recommended that a Paymaster be sent to the ship to have charge of the accounts and the commissary, which was done, and I was relieved of the duty as commissary after the Paymaster came. While at Charleston, Holcombe was detached and ordered to the Battleship Delaware. I was made Executive Surgeon and Phelps took over the medical division. While making the repairs, I devised an extension crane for hoisting patients aboard, which was installed on the ship.

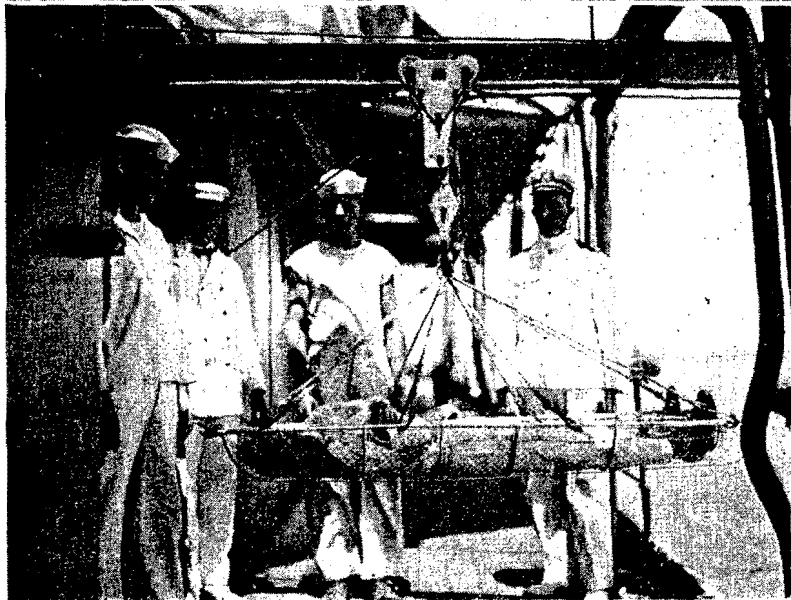
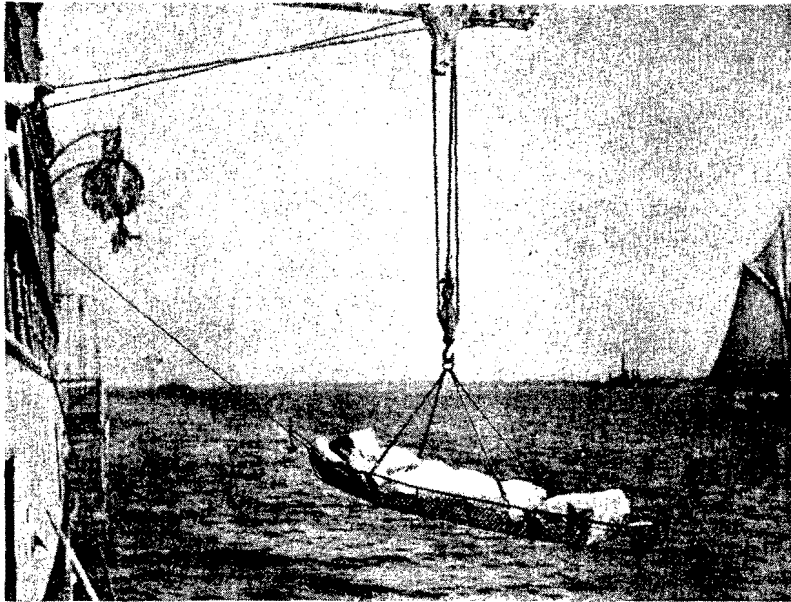
After completing the repairs, we joined the fleet in Hampton Roads, where it was stationed for summer maneuvers and practice outside the Capes. The fleet usually assembled in the Hudson River at New York for the Christmas holidays to give the men liberty before leaving for Guantanamo Bay for winter drills. We were in North River, New York December 26, 1910 when a very severe storm came up. The steam launch at the boom capsized and sunk and a man was drowned. Schmidt and I were the only doctors aboard and Mr. Judd, the 2nd officer, was the only one of the sailing officers. The ship dragged anchors and came near going on the Jersey Shore. Judd got up anchor and went up the river to a safe anchorage and let go both anchors. I reported the loss of the





U. S. S. Solace, Hospital Ship.





Top: Hoisting a patient. Bottom: Receiving a patient aboard the Hospital Ship *Solace*.



man and the launch to the Admiral and got a nasty signal from him to report why the necessary precautions were not taken, which I did; but as six launches were lost that night by the battle ships, I never heard any more from him. On December 31st, the ice came down on us at the head of the line in a solid sheet. We steamed against it and had both anchors down; but we dragged and side wiped the Repair Ship Panther just below us and were approaching the New Jersey when some one yelled out "Next stop New Jersey," which we barely missed, and it caused quite a laugh. Then the ice broke up and the anchors held.

We went to Guantanamo Bay as usual with the fleet for winter drills and returned in the spring for repairs and summer drills. While at New York, I went on leave and the night before I got back a sailing launch with 80 men aboard returning from liberty capsized in the Hudson and 30 of them were drowned. The Commanding Officer was away and the bodies began coming aboard the Solace shortly after I got on board. We began embalming them under the direction of Dr. Clark, the pathologist. We only had 12 caskets aboard and they were soon exhausted. We had to embalm the bodies and lay them aside until a tug came along side with a supply of caskets. The bodies came aboard a few at a time until all were recovered the third day and a tug came along side and took them to the Navy Yard to be sent to their homes. So we had sad experiences in North River.

Surgeon Pickrell was relieved by Surgeon M. F. Gates as Commanding Officer and Dr. Vickery was relieved by Surgeon A. M. Fauntleroy and Surgeon E. J. Grow was sent to the ship as eye specialist. On the trip to Guantanamo, the fleet was divided into squadrons for battle maneuvers. We went to Boston to join the Georgia and two destroyers as one squadron. On the way down, we ran into the severest storm I had ever seen. The Georgia, being a heavy ship, took every sea over her bow while we rose gracefully and

got our decks wet very little. The destroyers stayed under the lee quarters of the two ships for a little protection. The storm broke up the battle maneuvers and every ship made its way to Guantanamo as best it could. We spent the winter in Guantanamo and went north in the spring.

In the fall the Fleet was going to Europe before going to Guantanamo and we were told we could make another cruise alone. We started out in October and went to San Juan where I met many of my old friends and acquaintances. We had a lovely visit there of about 10 days. From there, we went to Gadeloupe, one of the French islands, and had a very pleasant stay there of about 10 days. A rather amusing incident happened while there. Dr. Gates was quite a disciplinarian, a very precise and a fine officer. The paper there in writing up the ship's visit got his name as Mouly Fitz Gotes instead of Manly Fitch Gates and it made him very sore. Schmidt said they got it just right as he was "muly," he gave us "fits" and he got our "goats."

From there we went to La Guira, Venezuela and spent Christmas there, went to Caraccas the Capitol through the mountains and had a very interesting time. From there we went to Kingston, Jamaica passing the Dutch Islands on our way there. We had a very pleasant trip there and did a good deal of shopping. I had a suit made and all materials furnished for \$15, and I got cloth for another suit for \$6. When I got to the United States I asked a tailor what the cloth was worth and what he would make it up for. He said the cloth (2½ yds.) was worth \$6 a yard and he would make it up for \$18.

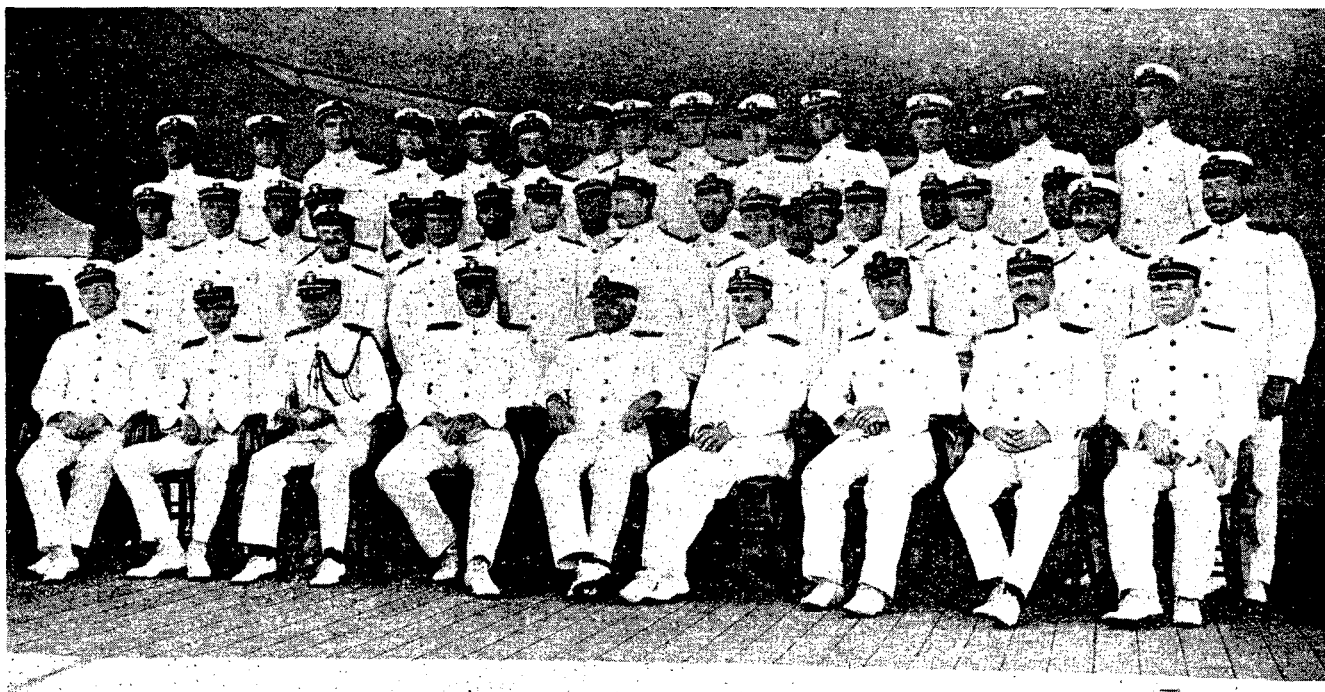
We joined the Fleet in Guantanamo and established a camp ashore where we sent all the Hospital Corpsmen we could spare to practice the drills. Asst. Surgeon W. H. Halsey, who had recently graduated from the Navy Medical Schools and joined the ship was put in charge of them ashore and conducted the



Medical Officers of the Hospital Ship *Solace*, 1912. Left to right, seated: Surgeon E. J. Grow, Eye, Ear, Nose and Throat Specialist; Med. Inspector M. F. Gates, Commanding; Surgeon E. M. Blackwell, Executive Surgeon. Standing: Asst. Surg. M. L. Schmidt, Asst. Surg.; Division P. A. Surg. E. A. Vickery, Chief of Surgery Division; Asst. Surg. J. R. Phelps, Chief of Med. Division; Asst. Surg. G. F. Clark, Pathologist and Asst. Med. Div.







Admiral Osterhaus (center) and Medical Officers of the Fleet.



drills. We went north in the spring and went to Washington shortly after our arrival to discharge patients and to be present at a Red Cross and Sanitary Exhibition, where we did hospital corps drills directed by Asst. Surgeon W. H. Halsey, and demonstrated how to handle patients on stretchers aboard ship.

## Chapter 21

### Duty at the Bureau of Medicine and Surgery And Second Cruise on the Solace

I was detached from the ship at Washington and ordered to duty at the Bureau of Medicine and Surgery. Surgeon H. A. Dunn relieving me in June, 1912.

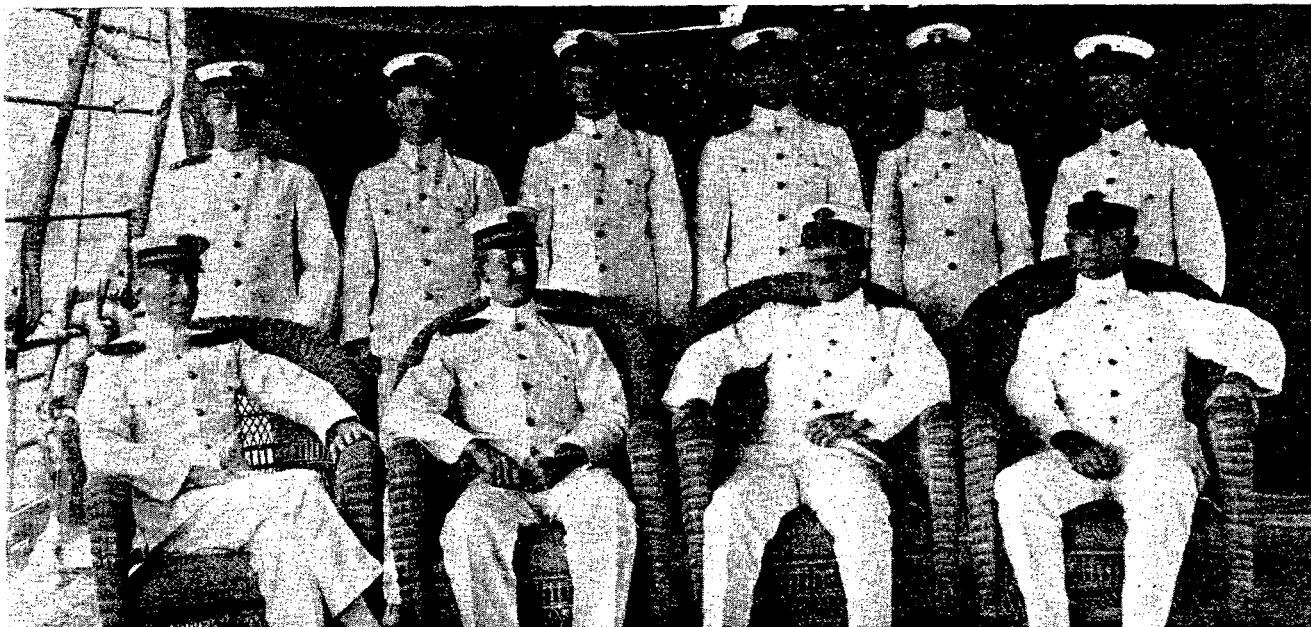
Medical Inspector C. F. Stokes, a good friend of mine, was Surgeon General. The Bureau was then located in the Mills Building at the corner of Pennsylvania Avenue and 17th Street, N. W. I was put in charge of the Naval Dispensary, which only had one Medical Officer and three Hospital Corpsmen. We were moved from there down to a building on New York Avenue and 17th Street. Surgeon Gen. Stokes was relieved by Surg. Gen. W. C. Braisted. I was relieved from the Dispensary work and put in charge of the division of records, pensions and physical requirements and had about 20 clerks in the division. I was also sanitary inspector of the building we occupied and that part of the State, War and Navy Building occupied by the Navy. I rented a house in Mt. Pleasant, N. W., and we spent three very pleasant years in Washington. When my tour of duty had expired Med. Inspector R. M. Kennedy, who commanded the Solace, asked for me as his Executive Surgeon and I was delighted to get back to my old ship again, reporting for duty in October 1915, at New York.

The Officers were R. M. Kennedy, Comdr., I was Executive Surgeon, H. F. Strine, head of Surg. division, E. L. Woods, Asst., Allen D. McLane, head of Med. division, with G. B. Tribble Asst. and Eye Specialist, "Abe" White, Dentist, and F. P. Williams, Paymaster. We had the usual cruise to Guantanamo Bay for winter drills and came back in the spring. We were ordered to Newport, R. I., where the Fleet was sta-



Commander E. M. Blackwell and the Staff of his Division of Records and Physical Requirements.  
in the Bureau of Medicine and Surgery.





Medical Officers of the U. S. Hospital Ship *Solace*, 1917. Seated, left to right: Lt. Com. Woods, Chief Med. Division; Commander Blackwell, Executive; Commander Blackwood, Commanding; Lt. Com. Old, Chief of Surgical Division. Standing, left to right: Lt. Woodland, Med. Division; Lt. O'Malley, Pathologist; Lt. Sheldon, Surgical Division; Jr. Lt. White, Dentist; Jr. Lt. Goodhue, Paymaster; Ch. Phar. Gall.





tioned for the summer, but a few days after we got settled there in June with our families, we received orders to go to San Domingo and Hayti. Fighting had broken out there and a regiment of marines had been ordered there.

We went down there and cruised around the Island, picking up the sick wherever we found them. On one occasion we were ordered to carry a company of Marines with arms and equipment from Monte Christi to Puerto Plata, San Domingo, landing them so they could march up Saniago in the interior, directly violating the neutrality of the ship.

The Armored Cruiser Memphis and gun boat Machias were anchored at San Domingo City when a tidal wave wrecked the Memphis on shore, but the Machias escaped. A good many were scalded on the Memphis and some died. We were on the north coast of the Island at the time when we got a wireless from the Admiral saying "Proceed at once to Guantanamo Bay, discharge patients, coal ship and come to San Domingo City as soon as possible to care for sick and wounded." The Commanding Officer showed it to me and asked what we had better do. I said to obey orders; but I would send a wireless requesting orders to proceed at once to San Domingo City, as we were needed there at once and would be delayed two days if we went to Guantanamo to coal ship. He gave orders to go to Guantanamo and told me to dictate a wireless to the Admiral. I sent the following wireless, "We have on board sufficient coal to go to San Domingo City and then to Guantanamo. We have 150 vacant cots aboard. Request orders to proceed at once to San Domingo City." We started for Guantanamo and got within 20 miles of it before we got a reply to go to San Domingo City. We changed course at once, having gone over 100 miles out of our way, and lost about 10 hours time. We got there the next day and found great confusion. The Memphis was hard aground on the reef, most of the crew camped ashore, and the

sick and wounded in an improvised hospital ashore. A dozen or more had been scalded by steam pipes bursting. Some had died and more would have died if we had not got there when we did. We went to Guantanamo, via Port au Prince Hayti, coaled ship and returned to the United States and discharged patients at the Naval Hospital, Norfolk.

A good many of the Hospital Corps were detached and others took their places. Comdr. Kennedy was detached later that fall and Comdr. Norman J. Blackwood relieved him. Dr. Strine and Dr. Tribble were relieved by Surgeon E. H. H. Hold and E. E. Woodland.

We went to Guantanamo as usual for winter manœuvres. The World War I was in full swing then. Germany was sinking ships indiscriminately and we were expecting to get into it any time. In April, 1917 war was declared against Germany. We went north in the spring, as usual, and made all extra preparations. We spent most of the summer with the Fleet in Long Island Sound at Newport, R. I., then were stationed with the Fleet at Yorktown, Va. The Fleet was receiving a good many recruits and they brought a good deal of sickness aboard with them and it kept us filled up nearly all the time. When we could take no more we would go to Norfolk and discharge them at the Hospital, come back to fill up again. The ship had berths to accommodate 170 patients, but at times we would have 350 aboard.

Things were crowded and conditions were not as they should be. We received a patient aboard one day who was a newspaper correspondent and reformer and was out looking for trouble, so he sent an exaggerated statement of conditions aboard to Senator Calder of New York. He without verifying it read it to the Senate. This created quite a stir and the Navy Department ordered two courts of Inquiry, one civilian, composed of Dr. Welch of Baltimore, Dr. Simon Flexner, and Hon. Abram Straus of New York. The Naval Court was composed of Admiral Rogers,



Commander Edward Maurice Blackwell, MC, U. S. Navy, 1917.





Mrs. E. M. Blackwell, 1917. (Mary Bowen).



Surgeon W. H. Bell and Surgeon H. O. Shiffert. Both Courts came aboard the Solace, made thorough inspections and held sessions lasting a week and reported that, while things were not as they should be, we had done an excellent job with the means and material we had. Blackwood and I, of course, were the defendants.

I went to Washington in September, 1917 and took my examination for promotion and passed and was commissioned Commander, Medical Corps, U. S. Navy. Prior to this, Medical Officers had only relative rank, not actual. Blackwood was detached and I was given command of the Solace in November, and was the first Medical Officer to "Command" a ship, as before that they had been "in charge." President Theodore Roosevelt had decided that Medical Officers should "command" hospital ships and hospitals.

Things went along as usual, filling up with patients and discharging them to the hospital. We had great difficulty in segregating the infectious diseases. The isolation wards had only 30 beds and there were at times as many as 120 infectious cases aboard, mumps, measles, diphtheria, scarlet fever, and cerebrospinal fever, etc. They had to be housed under the awning on the hurricane deck and separated only by canvas partitions and when it rained they had to be covered with rubber sheets to keep them dry. In spite of all this, we never had any cross infections.

## Chapter 22

### Detached From Solace for Operation Then to the Bureau of Medicine Surgery

While stationed at Yorktown, my wife and Lor-ena Conrad, her niece, went to Newport News, and used to come up to Yorktown to visit, as did a number of officers' wives. In November, 1917 she was called home by the death of her mother. My father had died in the spring of that year, and my younger brother, Lucian, the year before. I went home to Warrenton on leave in February, 1918 and while there was taken sick and went to the Naval Hospital, Washington, where Surgeon Strine did a gastro-enter-ostomy on me. I was detached from command of my ship, which almost broke my heart, and when I recovered went to Atlantic City to recuperate, then went home and to Newport News and, when fully recovered, to duty at the Bureau of Medicine and Surgery.

While on duty in Washington in 1919, I joined the George Washington Post Number One of the American Legion, the first Post that was organized. As I was getting along in years, I began planning for some place to live after retirement, and went around the suburbs of Washington a good deal looking for a place to locate and finally in 1920 bought a lot of about two acres near the Washington Golf and Country Club and Admiral Rixey in Arlington Co., Virginia, about three miles from Georgetown on Glebe Road at 26th Street. I planted shade trees and fruit trees, as the lot was bare, and they have grown to be beautiful trees. Being a great admirer of trees, I consider those trees the greatest monument I could have and often repeat the poem:



### Trees

"I think that I shall never see  
A poem lovely as a tree.  
A tree whose hungry mouth is pressed  
Against the earth's sweet flowing breast.  
A tree that looks at God all day  
And lifts its leafy arms to pray.  
A tree that may in summer wear  
A nest of robins in its hair.  
Upon whose bosom snow has lain  
And intimately lives with rain.  
Poems are made by fools like me,  
But only God can make a tree."

## Chapter 23

### Duty in Atlanta, Georgia

In February, 1920 my wife was operated on for malignant tumor of the breast. I was ordered to the Recruiting Station in Washington until she fully recovered, and in the late fall was ordered to the Navy Recruiting Station in Atlanta, Georgia, where two of Mary's sisters, Virginia Hancock and Ella Maddox were living. We spent a very pleasant year there until Mary's sister, Virginia, died in the fall of 1921, which cast a gloom over the rest of our stay there. We lived with her husband, Will, after her death.

My mother had also died in the same year; but I was unable to attend the funeral. I went on leave to Warrenton the next spring to settle up the affairs of the estate and upon my return brought my sister Bessie as far as Camden, South Carolina to stay with my sister Richie.

When I returned to Atlanta, I had a monument made for Father and Mother who were buried at Warrenton, out of Stone Mountain granite. Subsequent to that, my sister Bessie and sister Fannie and Elias Blackwell, her husband, were buried there and their names inscribed upon the monument. Stone Mountain is a remarkable granite rock about 10 miles from Atlanta, over a mile long and half a mile wide and about 750 feet high, rising abruptly out of the plain about 1,000 feet above the sea level. Two attempts have been made to carve upon it a Confederate Army led by Lee, Jackson and others; but were failures. For sentiment, I had the monument made from that stone.

The work was hard, recruiting and my health began to fail. At first I had only the Navy Recruiting Station, but in less than a year I had to take over the Marine Recruiting Station also. Atlanta was then

the largest recruiting station in the United States, recruiting more blue jackets and Marines than either New York, Chicago or Philadelphia. While stationed there, Marshal Foch of the French Army, in making a tour of the United States, visited Atlanta. When he left, there, the train he was on stopped a few minutes at the station of Emory University for him to address the faculty and students. I was on the station platform with the faculty when he appeared on the rear platform of the train. He saluted and said, "Young men, we old men of the past are surrendering into your keeping the conduct of the future and it behooves you to take up your burdens and quit yourselves like men." I shall never forget that address.

In January, 1923 the Surgeon General, Admiral Stitt, wrote me I was due for sea, and asked to what ship would I like to go. I wrote him I would like to go to a Naval hospital for overhaul before going to sea, as I had fallen off from 170 to 140 pounds. I was ordered to the Naval Hospital, Washington, and kept falling off until I reached 125 pounds. Dr. Clark, who was on the *Solace* with me, had my case and I suggested that I try some yeast. He agreed and I began to improve and reached 140 pounds in a month. The Surgeon General sent for me and asked if I was ready to go to sea. I told him I was not, I was 58 years old, had been at sea 14 years out of 25 and never felt real well at sea and I would break down again if I went. I was perfectly fit for shore duty, but not for sea. He said, in that case you will have to be examined for retirement. So I was retired in July, 1923.

I cannot close the account of my life in the Navy without paying tribute to Captain Werner and Captain Sibert, Sailing Masters of the *Solace*. They were two as fine Skippers as I ever knew in or out of the Navy, and the sailing officers and engineers were a fine set of men and we got along together without any friction.

## **Chapter 24**

### **I Retire and We Take a Trip to the West Coast**

In the fall of 1923, after my retirement, Mary and I took a trip out west to visit my sister Eva and her husband, Warren Goodman at Bozeman, Montana, and brother Jim and his wife and daughter, Eleanor and Brownie, in Seattle, Washington. We stopped in Chicago a couple of days to see the city and went on to Bozeman, arriving there about November 1st. We had a lovely stay there. Warren was collecting for a large dry goods firm, and I drove all over the country with him. We spent 5 days in Yellow Stone Park. The hotels were closed for the season; but we stayed in the camps where the employees were and ate with them, had good fare, and were very comfortable. There were log cabins 12 by 24 feet with the two ends curtained off for sleeping rooms, and in the center was a small cast iron stove with plenty of fire wood and a bucket full of sawdust saturated with kerosene, with a big iron spoon. You would put in several spoons of sawdust and the wood and light it. In five minutes the stove would be red hot. The geysers, boiling springs and hot lakes and various colored terraces were marvelous. "Old Faithful Geyser" erupted regularly every few minutes. The Grand Canyon of the Yellow Stone was a wonderful sight.

They tell a story of a cowboy who, when he first saw the canyon said, "golly, what a gully." Another story they tell about a lady asking a guide if the hot lakes ever froze over. He said, "Why, yes, Miss, a lady was a skeetin around thar on that one last winter and she broke in and scalded her foot." The Park is 7,000 feet above the sea level. It was very cold and snow was all over the ground. Some of the lakes are cold and there is one place where you can catch a fiish in one lake and turn around and drop it into an-

other lake on your line and cook it. We thoroughly enjoyed our trip through the Park and outings with Eva and Warren. While there I helped Eva and Warren to complete the plans for the house they expected to build the next spring. We met many of their friends and had a most delightful visit. Many of the houses in the country are built of logs, and some of them are very artistic. We took dinner with a Mrs. Maxey and she had a magnificent log house. It was over 100 feet long and elegantly finished and furnished inside. It had a court with a pond and gold fish and all sorts of tropical plants.

I went fishing one day with Warren, and will have to tell a fish story. The Maxey's, a family in Bozeman, went camping in the mountains and pitched their tent by a stream and four of them went fishing. None of them got a bite except Mrs. Maxey, and she caught six. She was called to the camp and was gone about half an hour. When she returned, none of them had gotten a bite. She threw in her hook again and caught five more. How do you account for it?

We left Bozeman the last of November and stopped in Helena a couple of days to see Nannie Conrad, Mrs. Smithers, a niece of Mary's and went on to Seattle. Washington is a great apple country and they were a glut on the market. We stopped at Yakima a few minutes and I was talking to a gentleman on the platform about apples. He said he had 10,000 trees, but it would not pay him to gather them. He owed \$2-000 and told his creditor he could have the apple crop for the debt, but he would not take it.

## Chapter 25

### We Visit Seattle, San Francisco and Los Angeles

We arrived in Seattle during the rainy season and, while we enjoyed our visit, we would have enjoyed it much more if we had had good weather. Seattle is a very thriving city on Puget Sound. The ground rises gradually from the Sound to about 300 feet. My brother, Jas. E. Blackwell, an architect and engineer, had been Inspector of Buildings for the City and my cousin, Jas. De Ruyter Blackwell was the City Engineer. Brother Jim was engaged in building the Shafer Building, a ten story office building.

The city was building a dam on the Skagit River, near the Canadian border, 125 miles away to increase its supply of water and power. The Mayor and city officials went up to inspect it and De Ruyter asked me to go as his guest. We went as far as the roads went in autos and then there was a narrow gage railroad through the mountains to the dam on which they had a big truck which pulled a coach to carry the workmen and cars to carry the material to the dam. They had built a village for the workmen with families and a lodging house and dining room for bachelors at the site of the power house. The dam was to be built 3 miles up the river gorge, which gave a drop of 400 feet to the power house. A tunnel 22 ft. in diameter had been cut through solid rock from the dam to the power house. The river was to be diverted into the tunnel while they were building the dam. I walked through the tunnel from the inlet to the outlet. It was a wonderful experience. On our trip we went through forests of Douglas fir, many of the trees 6 to 8 feet in diameter. We stayed there two days and returned to Seattle after a most enjoyable trip. Mr. Shafer was very nice to us, sending his chauffeur and car to show us around the city. While there, we went

to Bremerton across the Sound to the Naval Station to see the dry dock that my brother had built about 1900, and met Guyler whom I had known in Samoa, now a Navy Civil Engineer. We also went over to Tacoma and there I met an acquaintance, Frank Fletcher, whom I had known when teaching school in Accomac Co., Virginia. We had a delightful visit and enjoyed being with my brother and Eleanor and Brownie very much. Brother Jim completed the plans for my house which I expected to build when I returned home.

We left Seattle early in January and went to San Francisco where we met John Riggs, Eleanor's brother and Tibbetts and John Leonard, whom I had known in Samoa. We visited Golden Gate Park and other places of interest and left in about a week for Los Angeles.

In Los Angeles we found Edgar Holland, his wife, Virginia Conrad, Mary's niece, and they were very nice to us, showing us around the city. We visited a Mr. Bulen, a friend of Eva and Warren, at Long Beach and went through the oil fields and orange groves and visited Cataline Island and saw the wonderful marine growths from glass bottom boats. We also visited Pasadena and the Mt. Lowe observatory about 4,000 feet up in the mountains, and went on to a little chalet about 1,000 feet further up where we had lunch. On parts of the trolley line we had to be hauled up by cables. At the chalet, a party was formed to go on mule and horseback to the top of Mt. Lowe, 1,100 feet higher and asked me to join them; but I declined as I wanted to walk up to see if I had recovered entirely from my illness. I left after them, overtook and passed them and got to the top some minutes before they arrived. The view was grand from up there. The cities of Los Angeles, Pasadena, and many towns and the Pacific Ocean were in full view.

We left Los Angeles about February 1st by the

Southern Pacific on our way back home. We stopped at the Grand Canyon of the Colorado and it was the most wonderful sight I ever saw. We drove for miles along the rim of it. I can't begin to describe it.

We continued our trip on to New Orleans, where we arrived in time for the Mardi Gras which we enjoyed very much. It is a quaint old city, especially the French quarter. We visited the levees and took a short trip up the Mississippi on a stern wheeler boat. From there we went to Atlanta to visit Mary's sister Ella and Virgil Maddox, her husband, Will Hancock, and old friends and acquaintances; then on to Camden, South Carolina to see my sister Richie and her husband Willis Cantey and our various friends and acquaintances there. Enroute to Camden we changed trains at Columbia, where we were met by Dr. Fred Williams who took us to lunch and showed us around the city until train time.



## Chapter 26

### **We Return, Build a Home and Help Build a Church**

We got back to Washington about March 1, 1924 and went to live with my brother-in-law Will Hinman at Falls Church, Virginia and commenced preparing to build our house at Livingstone Heights, about half way between Falls Church and Washington, where I had purchased a lot in 1920 and planted shade and fruit trees upon it. As soon as we got settled at Falls Church, I commenced building a garage and excavating for the foundation of the house. I hired all the workmen by the day and bought all the material. I superintended the job and did about as much work as any of the men. We stayed at Falls Church until after Christmas when we moved over to Livingstone Heights, to be near the house I was building, and boarded with a Miss Polen. The house was a Dutch Colonial brick with a portico with large fluted Doric columns in front. I took my time in building and we moved into it May 1, 1925 and began furnishing it and getting settled.

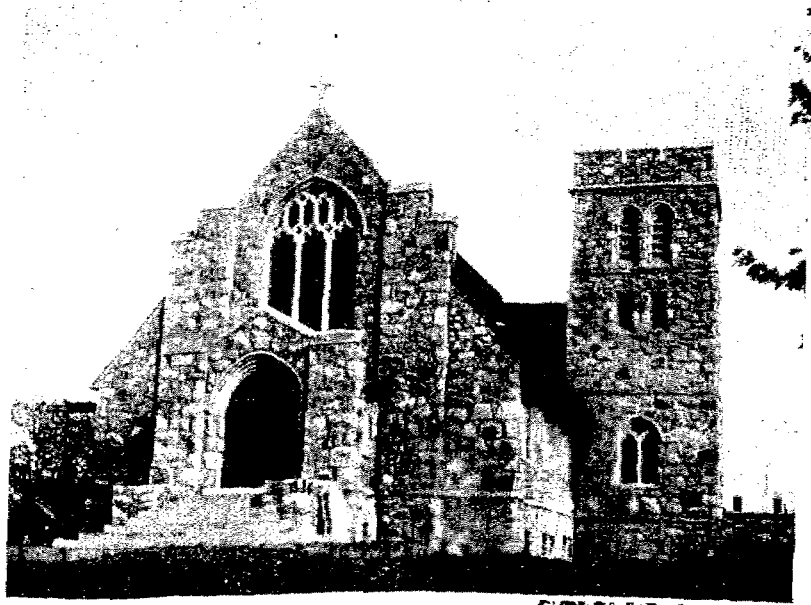
We had very congenial neighbors in the Campbells and Rices next door to us and the Simpsons and Admiral P. M. Rixey who had been Surgeon General in the Navy and who had a beautiful mansion about a quarter of a mile distant. I joined the Washington Golf and Country Club only  $\frac{1}{4}$  a mile away with a very fine golf course. I used to play a good deal with the Admiral until his death in 1927.

In 1925 Admiral Rixey donated a triangular piece of land in front of my house to the Dioces of Virginia for an Episcopal Church and in April of 1926, we organized a congregation and commenced holding services in Carne's School House at Glebe Road and 25th Street. Rev. J. G. Sadtler, Rector of St. John's Church at McLean, three miles distant, conducted services

as this was a mission church of St. John's. A Sunday School was started. I was appointed Superintendent and commenced the school with only eight scholars, but it has grown since to over 200. Ground was broken for the Church June 5, 1926 by Bishop H. St. George Tucker. The work was begun and in August, the cornerstone was laid by Bishop W. Cable Brown. Admiral and Mrs. Rixey donated the site and matched the donations of the congregation up to \$12,500 and it would not have been possible to build the church without their help.

The chief contributors were Admiral Rixey, Walter Weaver, B. G. Foster, Edward Kerschner, B. L. Jacobs, J. L. Keddy, Glegge Thomas, Walter G. Campbell, John Grunwell, James Weir, T. Turner Smith, Rev. Sam Small, Dr. Draper, Mr. Saegmuller, Wilson Camp, E. M. Blackwell, and others. A Construction Committee was appointed consisting of Admiral Rixey, Chairman; B. G. Foster and E. M. Blackwell as Secretary and Treasurer. My duties were to keep a record of the acts of the Committee, superintend and pay for the construction. Living just across the street from the Church, I spent a good deal of time superintending and directing the work. The church was finished and we held the first service in it in April, 1927. While we thought the church would cost about \$30,000, it cost in excess of \$45,000.

We had considerable difficulty in raising money for the building. We borrowed \$15,000 in short term loans from the Cherrydale Bank and when that was exhausted we borrowed \$20,000 from the Washington Loan and Trust Co. Admiral Rixey had to guarantee the loan; 10 men had to give notes of \$500 each, before the bank would make the loan; but Admiral Rixey gave them indemnifying bonds to insure that they would not have to pay the notes, except to Mr. Douglas Mackall, Mr. B. G. Foster and E. M. Blackwell, who paid their notes. Mr. Weaver's note was paid by



Saint Mary's Protestant Episcopal Church, Arlington, Va.



Mrs. Weaver after his death, and Rev. J. G. Sadtler paid his also.

The Sunday School donated the cornerstone for the Church and the baptismal font. Murphy and Ames donated the material and I made the pedestal on which it sits. The first Vestry consisted of B. L. Jacobs, J. L. Keddy, Jr. Warden, Walter Weaver, Edward Kirschner, Glegge Thomas, Register, and T. Turner Smith, Treasurer and E. M. Blackwell, Senior Warden. Dr. Rixey being Jr. Warden of St. John's Church in Washington, would only serve on the Vestry as an honorary member. The debt on the church was slowly liquidated; and the congregation has been steadily growing. From an average attendance of 25 or 30 at first, it has grown to about 150, and at Christmas, Easter and Thanksgiving the church will not hold the congregation and we are now contemplating enlarging it.

Admiral Rixey had decided opinions and was determined to carry his point. I used to tell the members of the Committee that they could not expect a man who had been Surgeon General of the Navy 8 years and the personal physicians of two Presidents (McKinley and Theodore Roosevelt) to be influenced to any extent by them. At the meeting which authorized borrowing the \$20,000, Admiral Rixey stated that the finances were in a very favorable condition. I requested permission to present a statement showing that we were in debt \$15,000, and the church far from completion. He became very angry and accused me of misrepresentation. That made me mad, and we had a very heated argument. He came to me after the meeting and said, "Dr., we have our arguments and disagreements, but we are friends still." He had visions of the church's growth, which have in a great measure come true. In his will he left a bequest of \$20,000 to the church to take care of the debt. He died suddenly in the fall of 1927 and in set-

tling up his estate there was not enough to pay the bequest. He had a heart attack and called me about 10 P. M. I saw he was very ill and called Comdr. Calver, the attending Naval physician and he called Dr. Strine, who had operated upon the Admiral, and he called Admiral Cary Grayson, a nephew of Dr. Rixey; but we could do nothing for him and he passed away about 1 A. M.

I was elected Senior Warden of the Vestry and Superintendent of the Church School and have continued in those capacities until the present. Being convenient to the church, and being a "Jack of all trades," I have spent a good deal of time caring for the church, making changes and repairs and looking after the grounds and shrubbery. Admiral and Mrs. Rixey purchased the pulpit, lectern, chair and prayer desk with gold coins they received at their "Golden Wedding" in 1927. As the church was not able to buy pews and choir stalls, they got the material and with a helper I made them at one quarter of the price they would have cost. Among the additions we have made to the church is a beautiful art glass window in 1940 with this inscription on it:

TO THE GLORY OF GOD  
IN MEMORY OF  
ADMIRAL AND MRS. RIXEY

As the church was heavily in debt, we did not think we could finance the window and appealed to Admiral Rixey's friends in and out of the Services, but met with very little success. After delaying about a year, we determined to finance it ourselves. I was appointed Chairman and Treasurer of the Committee. After the campaign was well under way some parties who had not known Admiral Rixey did not want to make the window a memorial to him. I told them if they refused to make it a memorial to him, I would return the

donations that had been made for that purpose and resign as Chairman and Treasurer.

A fine pipe organ was added in 1942. Reverend Sadtler retired for age in 1935 and was succeeded by Rev. Peyton R. Williams who accepted another call in 1941 and was succeeded by Rev. Geo. F. Tittman in 1942, who was given leave in 1943 to go as Chaplain in the Navy for the duration of the World War, and he was relieved temporarily by the Rev. Dr. R. O. Kevin from the Episcopal Seminary near Alexandria. I must pay my respects to Mr. Theodore C. Hudson who is a lay reader and the most useful and valuable member we have in the church. The Congregation and the Vestry of St. Mary's Church have shown their appreciation of my work in the church in many ways. The congregation presented me with a handsome silver bowl with the inscription:

Commander E. M. Blackwell

In Loving Appreciation of His Devoted Service  
To St. Mary's Church

Arlington, Va.

February, 1938

The Vestry also gave me a testimonial of their friendship and appreciation. One of the greatest compliments I ever had was paid by a little girl of the Sunday School, Phoebe Hudson. She heard her mother say that Dr. Blackwell was doing a great work for the Church and she said, "Well, don't he own it?"

## Chapter 27

### Life in Arlington County, Virginia

Since settling in Arlington, I have lead a fairly active outdoor, life, attending to my flowers, trees and grounds, raising chickens and working in my garden. I am a fair hatchet and saw carpenter; but I don't care for it. My hobbies are cabinet work and wood carving and I have done a good bit at them. I have carved plaques of the coats of arms of 10 families of our ancestors. I have carved a plaque of the insignia of the Sons of the Revolution and presented it to the Washington, D. C., Society; one of the insignia of the American Legion for Geo. Washington Post Number 1 in the D. C.; one of the Daughters of the American Revolution for my wife, which she presented to the Fairfax County Chapter and it is on exhibition in Gadsby's Tavern, Alexandria, Va.; one for the General Society of the Cincinnati, of which Washington was the first President, and which is on exhibition, with a facsimile of Washington's oath of allegiance to the United States signed at Valley Forge May 12, 1778 before Gen. Stirling; and an epaulet worn by my great-grandfather, Major Joseph Blackwell, in the Revolution, given by my Sister, Mrs. Mary Blackwell Smith in the Lars Anderson House in Washington, D. C., which was presented to the General Society by Col. Lars Anderson and his wife as its headquarters.

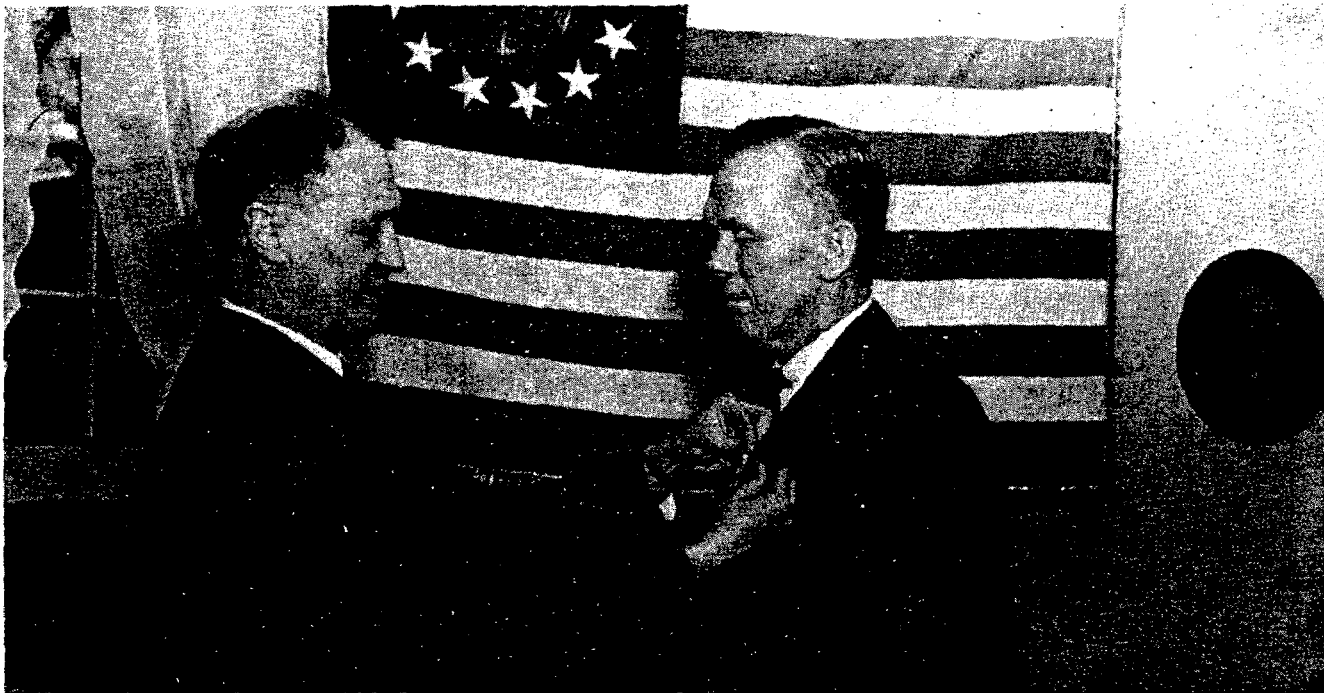
I also carved a plaque of the insignia for the Virginia society of the Cincinnati, commemorating the founding of the Society at its first dinner in the Rising Sun Tavern, Fredericksburg, Virginia, with the following inscription on it:





Commander Blackwell dedicating a plaque he carved of the insignia of Cincinnati Society in the Rising Sun Tavern, Fredericksburg, Va., 30 Ma 1940, commemorating its first dinner on the day of its founding 6 October 17  
Left, Col. Forbes, Pres't. Loyal Legion.





Col. Edgar E. Hume decorating Gen. Geo. C. Marshall, Chief of Staff, U. S. A. with the insignia of the Cincinnati Society of Va. in the Rising Sun Tavern, Fredericksburg, Va., March 1940. The Society was founded there 6 October 1783.



ON THE DAY OF ITS FOUNDATION,  
THE SOCIETY OF THE CINCINNATI  
IN THE STATE OF VIRGINIA  
General George Weedon, President,  
HELD ITS FIRST DINNER IN THIS ROOM  
6 OCTOBER, 1783 at 5 P. M.  
THE SOCIETY MET HERE IN  
SESQUICENTENNIAL CELEBRATION  
6 OCTOBER, 1933 at 5 P. M.

The plaque was dedicated in the Tavern March 30, 1940 at the same time that we decorated General George C. Marshall, Chief of Staff, U. S. A., with the medal of the Society and gave him a diploma which made him an honorary member.

The President of the Society, Col. Edgar E. Hunne presented me with the flag of the Society draped over the plaque when I unveiled it. I then made the following address: "Madam President, Madam Directress and members of the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, General Marshall, Mr. President and fellow members of the Cincinnati Society, Ladies and Gentlemen: It gives me great pleasure to be with you on this auspicious occasion of the presentation of the diploma and the insignia of our Society to our distinguished member General George C. Marshall, Chief of Staff, U. S. Army, and the dedication of this tablet commemorating the gathering of the Society in this hall on the day of its foundation 157 years ago. We sincerely appreciate the courtesy of your Association in having us to conduct this ceremony and to install and dedicate this tablet in this historic mansion, built by Charles Washington, brother of George Washington, the first President General of the Cincinnati Society and where so many great and il-

lustrious statesmen and patriots have fore-gathered in defense of our liberties in days of yore. This Association deserves great praise and credit for its efforts to preserve the antiquities of Virginia and keep alive the history of its past greatness. We should take pride in our glorious past and do all we can to perpetuate the memory of its great men and women and their noble deeds for posterity. This City where we are gathered today is hallowed ground and has more antiquities to remind us of the great men and women of Colonial days than any other city in the country and the Northern Neck of Virginia, just across the River, has produced more great men, illustrious statesmen and patriots than any like area in the Union or perhaps in the World. There were born George Washington, the Father of his Country, who, by his courage, sagacity, foresight, perseverance and devotion to duty, established our independence and became our first President. James Madison, the Father of our Constitution, James Monroe, who promulgated the "Monroe Doctrine," George Mason, the author of the Bill of Rights, William Grayson, our first Senator from Virginia, John Marshall, Chief Justice of the United States and a Jurist without a peer, Richard Henry Lee, who moved that the Declaration of Independence be adopted, and his brother Francis Lightfoot Lee, signers of the Declaration. Henry Lee (Light Horse Harry) the originator and leader of the "Westmoreland Protest," which lead up to the Declaration of Independence, and the most daring cavalry leader of the Revolution, his illustrious son, Robert E. Lee, a most devout Christian gentleman and one of the greatest, if not the greatest military leader of all time, Matthew Fontain Maury, the great geographer and Pathfinder of the Seas, Robert Carter, noted for his philanthropy, great wealth and generosity, and many other men.

I greatly appreciate the honor conferred upon me by the Cincinnati Society of Virginia in delegating to me the carving of this tablet commemorating its first

meeting in this hall on the day of its foundation October 6, 1783. I take pride in the fact that I have, in a small degree, contributed to keeping alive the memory of this event in the history of our Society of which my great-grandfather, Joseph Blackwell and his brother, John Blackwell, were original members and signers of the "Westmoreland Protest" at the call of "Light Horse Harry Lee" February the 26th, 1776. I thank you."

At the previous annual meeting of the Society in Richmond, I had presented Colonel Hunne with a carved plaque of the crest and coat of arms of his family in appreciation of his friendship and the courtesies he had shown me. I have carved birds, animals and other things to decorate my home.

## Chapter 28

### Vacations, Recreations and Societies to Which I Belong, Poems, Etc.

Things went along very smoothly with us. We usually took vacation trips in the summer visiting various resorts. I had a funny experience at Hot Springs, Virginia where we had gone to have Mary treated for neuritis. The crystal of my watch was broken and I asked the manager where I could get it fixed. He said a Mr. Loving, who lived about a mile away, could do it. I went out there to a little house on the side of the mountain and knocked on the door. In a short while a man came around the corner in a blacksmith's apron and smut on his face. I said, "Is this Mr. Loving?" He said, "That's my name." "Can you fix a crystal in my watch." "I reckon I can." I went into a room which reminded me of Dicken's Old Curiosity Shop. He sat down at a desk, pulled out a drawer, looked at my watch, took out some crystals, selected one and snapped it in and handed me the watch saying, "There you are." I said, "you did that very deftly and quickly." He said, "yes, I have as good a set of crystals as there is in the United States and I can fit any watch in the U. S." "I want to tell you something," he said. "A gentleman from New York came down here with a hunting case watch with the crystal broken and they told him I could fix it. He said he could not get it fixed in New York at Tiffany's and he was sure he could not down here. They told him I had never failed, so he brought the watch to me. I examined it and snapped in a crystal just as I did yours. He said, 'Well, I be damned.' He said, 'Come up to the office, I want you to hear a letter I am going to dictate.' He said, 'Dear Mr. Tiffany: You probably remember my coming into your office a few days ago to have a crystal fitted into my watch. You could not do it without grinding one and





The "Anchorages", numbers one and two, homes of Commander Blackwell, Arlington Co., Va.





Commander E. M. Blackwell in his "Den" with his carvings and curios.



a jeweler next door could not do it, and one down the street could not do it, so I came down here into the backwoods of Virginia and had one fitted in on the first trial by a blacksmith, the brother of an undertaker'."

In the summer of 1935, Mary's niece, Lorene Conrad, who had married Richard Wedderspoon, Professor of Art in the Syracuse University, New York, died after a lingering illness with us for over a year and was buried in Arlington Cemetery. Her mother had died when she was an infant and she had lived with her grandmother since, and Mary looked upon her as her child, as we had no children of our own. Mary was very much depressed and run down and needed a change, so we went to Canada to join my sister Mildred Hinman and Will her husband, who were vacationing there. On our way up there, we took lunch at Green Castle, Pennsylvania and I asked the proprietor, just back from Canada, how the people were up there. He said, "They are very much like ours except they are a little more polite." We found them to be a very delightful people and spent a very pleasant vacation at the Grand View and the Tally Ho Inn near Huntsville. There were a great number of small lakes around and you could hardly step out of doors without stepping into a lake. Our hotel faced a lovely lake in which was Big Wind Island, named after Chief Big Wind, and on which was the largest summer resort in Canada. We brought the Hinman's back with us and returned by Niagara Falls and Watkins Glen after a most enjoyable vacation.

As our house and lot were too large for just the two of us, I built a smaller house on a smaller lot just back of it and we moved into it in the fall of 1935. I had the bricklayers, carpenters and plasterers to finish their work and then I did all the inside finish work myself, except laying the floor. I made the mantels and built the stairway and did a good bit of wood carving inside. I was determined to have plenty of

heat so, in addition to the furnace and radiators, I had a radiant gas heater in every room. When I got through I had a very complete house with a parlor, living room, dining room, kitchen, breakfast room and bathroom and hall on the first floor, three bed rooms with closets and a sleeping porch and bath room on the second floor, a laundry, maid's room, bath room, recreation room, furnace room and work shop in the basement. I named it "The Anchorage", and hope to be anchored there the rest of my days.

In 1937, we spent the winter in Florida, stopping at Camden and Savannah on our way down. We went down the east coast, stopping at St. Augustine, Daytona Beach, Palm Beach and Lake Worth, where we stayed two weeks at the Gulf Stream Hotel, and then on to Dania Beach, 15 miles from Miami, which we visited several times, went to the horse races at Hialeah and the dog races at Hollywood about 2 miles from us and the lion farms near Fort Lauderdale. I thought I was going to enjoy the surf bathing, but the water was too cold to enjoy it. We visited friends in Miami, the Chittendens, the Terrells and the Wedderspoons at Cocoanut Grove. The most beautiful thing we saw in Florida was the Venetian Pool in Cocoanut Grove. We left Dania and went across to the West coast, taking lunch at Lake Okeechobe. We passed through Fort Myer and spent the night at Sarasota, the winter quarters of Barnum and Baileys Circus. From there we ferried across Tampa Bay, went through St. Petersburg to Clearwater, where we spent a week at Sun Set Inn, visiting places of interest around there, among them the Peacock Farm and the Sponge Fisheries at Tarpon Springs.

From there we went to Hains City in the interior near the Bok Sanctuary or Singing Tower, which we visited several times and were there at the annual powwow of the Seminole Indians. We drove around the country a good deal, visiting Kissimee, Orlando, Lake



Commonwealth of Massachusetts







Survivors of the Hospital Ship *Solace*. University Club, Philadelphia, 1945. Back row, left to right: second, Rear Admiral Sheldon; third, Pharmacist Goldong; fifth, Lt. Comdr. Kern; sixth, Capt. Werner. Middle row: Second, Comdr. Old; third, Comdr. Blackwell; fourth, Pharmacist Wierbuck; fifth, Dr. Hitchens.



Wales, Lakeland, Winterhaven, Avon Park and other places. We left there and went to Silver Spring, stopping at Ocala to visit Yancey Williams' sister. Silver Spring is wonderful. It comes out from under a cliff in volume enough to form a stream to float a 40-foot steam launch which plys up and down it with sight-seeing passengers. There is a Seminole village adjoining the grounds and one of the warriors was about the finest physical specimen of manhood I ever saw.

We left there and headed for Atlanta. We crossed the Suwanee River where the bridge had over the entrances, "Way down upon the Suwanee Ribber" from Stephen Foster's song, and we stopped long enough to sing it. We passed through Macon and went on to Atlanta to visit Mary's nieces Mrs. Tatum and her sister. Mary's sister, Virginia, had died while we were stationed in Atlanta and Ella a few years later. While there I read "Gone With the Wind" in the evenings while the others played cards. We left there and headed for home, stopping in Camden to visit Willis and Richie, Cantey my brother-in-law and sister, and arrived home about April 1st in time to start gardening.

We settled down to the routine of home life, going on vacations and visiting our friends and relations. About the most pleasant recreations I have had since retiring have been the annual meetings of the survivors of the Hospital Ship Solace at the University Club, Philadelphia. These meetings were gotten up by Comdr. Richard A. Kern, a Reserve Officer, who came to the Solace after I left. We meet on the first Saturday in November, have a dinner, swap yarns, crack jokes, and recall happenings on the Solace. There are Naval and Civilian Officers, Hospital Corpsmen, sailor men and the "Black Gang," as the machinists, firemen and coal passers are called, at these meetings, which are very enjoyable. At the 1941 meeting we presented Comdr. Kern with a handsome silver platter

with a picture of the Solace and this inscription engraved upon it:

“Presented to Commander Richard A. Kern,  
M. C., U.S.N.R.

In Token of Their Esteem and Affection

By his Friends, Officers and Men of the U. S. S.  
Solace,

Commissioned April 14, 1898—Decommissioned July 20, 1921.”

We had a very pleasant vacation at Berkley Springs, West Virginia, in 1940. We used to attend the annual meetings of the Cincinnati Society in Richmond and enjoyed them very much. We attended the Triennial Meeting of the General Society in Richmond in May, 1941 and had a delightful time. It lasted three days and we visited Yorktown, where we were given a luncheon by Mr. George Blow at the Nelson House, the Head Quarters of Cornwallis at the siege of Yorktown and General Nelson, the owner, offered a pound starling to every artillery man who would hit it. We also visited Jamestown and Williamsburg where the Society held a short meeting in the Colonial Capitol. On the last day of the meeting Hon. John Stewart Bryan, President of William and Mary College, gave us a grand luncheon at his beautiful residence and grounds in the suburbs when we returned home.

At the business meeting of the Society I addressed and told them that the war in Europe was our war and that we would have to get into it whether we wanted or not. I repeated the poem, *The Debt of the Nations*, which I had written and published in the *Army and Navy Register* just after the World War I, and it was published in minutes of the meeting:

### The Debt of the Nations

Why are ye nations gathered, What means this vast  
array  
Of men and horse, tanks and guns And air and  
sea-fleets gray?  
The tyrant and oppressor Has defied God's just com-  
mand  
And for liberty and common weal, United now  
ye stand  
Ye've sacrificed your treasure, Your noble sons ye gave,  
Who bravely faced hell's horrors Your homes and  
lives to save.  
To them and all posterity A debt to pay ye owe  
To banish savage warfare From this earth for-  
ever more,  
United in a holy cause. Why should ye dare to stray  
From paths of peace and comfort, To strife and  
bloody fray  
And should you fail to consummate, The task so well  
begun  
How would ye then be better than, The savage  
or the Hun  
Ye stronger Nations, hark ye well, Your duty's plain  
and clear  
Ye are your brother's keepers, This burden must  
ye bear.  
Bestir yourselves, take up your load And ever ready  
be  
To crush and banish tyranny, Which would en-  
slave the free  
While right and justice should prevail And men in  
peace should dwell  
Wherever greed and lust doth lurk, Might must  
obtain as well.  
So be prepared at every turn, By force maintain the  
right  
When moral suasion fails to make Your neighbor  
see the light."

Another poem I had written, "Rally to the Call" was also published in the Army and Navy Register and repeated by me at the annual meeting of the Society in 1943:

**"Rally to the Call"**

From the shores of California, to the rocky coasts of  
Maine,

We came from every mountain side, from valley, hill  
and plain.

From city, town and hamlet, we rallied to the call  
Of freedom and humanity to rescue man from thrall.

We left our homes and country and crossed the briny  
sea

To battle for humanity and strike for liberty  
Of every tribe and nation beneath the tyrant's pall  
Wherever duty beckoned, we rallied to the call.

We fought in sunny Italy, on Russia's icy shores  
In Flander's fields on France's plains, mid Asia's wastes  
of snows

On every sea from Africa to frozen Arctic's wall  
Wherever danger threatened, we rallied to the call.

The fight was won, our work was done, farewell to  
Allies dear.

We fought for you on land and sea, in air and trenches  
drear.

Should tyranny e'er rise again, to threaten man's down-  
fall

We'll join in freedom's holy cause and rally to the call.

**CHORUS**

Then we'll rally to the call wherever we may be  
Wherever duty calls, Boys, we'll fight to make men free  
We'll battle for humanity, whatever may befall  
And when the bugle sounds, Boys,\* we'll rally to the  
call.

(\* Bugle Call Assembly)

I wrote several other wartime songs and had them printed, but they did not take.

When World War II commenced, I thought we should demonstrate our patriotism as well as our religion by hoisting the national flag under the church pennant at Divine Services at St. Mary's Church. So I had a flag pole erected in front of the church and we hoisted the flag and pennant for service every Sunday.

On my 80th birthday, the Church presented me with a gold watch chain and a beautiful American flag, and the Red Cross Unit donated a new church pennant. As the old flags were getting frayed, I decided to use the new ones, so we dedicated them October 4, 1945.

All stood at attention as I gave the order "Colors," hoisted the Pennant and the flag and made the following address:

"Members and friends of St. Mary's Church, I thank you again for this beautiful flag, the emblem of our country and our patriotism, which you presented me on my 80th birthday as a token of your friendship and esteem. Words cannot express my gratitude at this evidence of your appreciation of my efforts to serve this Church since its foundation in 1926.

"The Church flag, bearing the cross of Jesus Christ, is the only one that can be flown above the American flag. On all Navy ships and at all Naval Stations, the Church pennant is hoisted above the National flag at Divine services in acknowledgment of the supremacy of God. No more fitting use can be made of these flags than hoisting them during Divine services to demonstrate our faith and our patriotism. A man may be a patriot, willing to fight and die for his country, and yet not be a Christian; but no man can be a Christian and not a patriot.

"I now dedicate this pennant and this flag to the Glory of God, to Christianity and to Patriotism."

The Rector, Reverend Robert O. Kevin accepted

the flags, the Choir sang The Star Spangled Banner and the order "Carry on" was given.

At the annual meeting of the Cincinnati Society in the State of Virginia in Richmond, Va., October 20, 1945, I presented the Society with a carved mahogany plaque with the eagles of the Society on it and the following inscription:

Revolutionary services of Joseph Blackwell, Sr. and his three sons,

Lieut. Joseph Blackwell, 1715-1787, 3rd Va. Regiment Commanded by Col.

Thos. Marshall of Oak Hill, Virginia.

Capt. Samuel Blackwell, 1745-1783, Virginia Line.

Capt. Joseph Blackwell, 1752-1805, Maj. Subsist. Dept.

Capt. John Blackwell, 1755-1808, Gen. Va. Militia.

Joseph and John signed the "Westmoreland Protest," at the call of Henry (Light Horse Harry) Lee, and were Original members of the Cincinnati Society.

This plaque has been placed in the Larz Anderson House in Washington, the headquarters of the General Society of the Cincinnati.

In July, 1941 Mary, my wife, had to go to the hospital for a gall bladder operation. She improved some, but never recovered. She lingered on, got worse and finally passed away on July 18, 1942 and was buried in Arlington National Cemetery. She had every attention, trained nurses all the time and the visiting Navy doctors, Specialists, and the doctors at the Naval Hospital were very attentive. It was the greatest loss to me and I don't know how I would have carried on if my widowed sister Mrs. Eva A. Goodman had not come to live with me. We had had a happy life together; but the greatest cross of our lives was that we had no children. Eva had lost her husband in 1925 and was bravely carrying on alone in Spokane, Washington and I was glad I could offer her a home. We have adjusted ourselves to circumstances and will carry on



to the end. We are in a fine neighborhood, have a comfortable home, congenial neighbors, good health and have a great deal for which to be thankful. We try to be helpful to our community, our neighbors and our relatives. The only real happiness that the right kind of person can have is in doing something that is worth while and in helping those who need it. I have tried to do my duty to my parents, especially in their declining years, to my family, friends, community, country and fellow man. I believe in God and Jesus Christ and hope to be rewarded at the end.

### **SOCIETIES AND ORGANIZATIONS TO WHICH I BELONG**

1. The Cincinnati Society in the State of Virginia, being a great grandson of Maj. Joseph Blackwell, and a great-grand-nephew of Gen. John Blackwell, who were original members of the Society and signers of the Westmoreland Protest.
2. The Sons of the Revolution of the District of Columbia. Eight ancestors served in the Revolution.
3. George Washington Post Number 1 of the American Legion of the District of Columbia, World War I.
4. The Bull Run Camp number 450 of the Sons of Confederate Veterans, District of Columbia.
5. The American Medical Association.
6. Fellow of the American College of Surgeons.
7. President of the Virginia Society of the D. C. (1933-1935) the largest State Society in the District.
8. Senior Warden of St. Mary's Episcopal Church and Superintendent of the Church School, from its foundation, 1926 to 1947.

APPENDIX

CONSECRATION

— OF —

ST. MARY'S EPISCOPAL CHURCH

ARLINGTON, VIRGINIA

BY

The Right Reverend Frederick Dean Goodwin, D.D.  
Bishop of Virginia

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 7, 1947

The Rev. George F. Tittmann, Rector

BURNING OF THE MORTGAGE  
CONSECRATION OF THE CHURCH  
ORDER OF CONFIRMATION  
RECEPTION FOR DR. E. M. BLACKWELL  
SENIOR WARDEN OF ST. MARY'S 1927-47  
Benefactor - Teacher - Leader



Bishop Tucker breaking ground for St. Mary's Protestant Episcopal Church, Arlington, Va. Rev. J. G. Sadtler, Rector, left; Dr. Blackwell, first, Admiral Rixey, third right of the Bishop.



Dr. E. M. Blackwell—St. Mary's only Senior Warden and her greatest benefactor\*—Today—Consecration Day at St. Mary's—will also be known as Dr. Blackwell Day. For a long time his dearest wish has been to have the Church building free of debt. Knowledge of this gave impetus to the recent drive which resulted in its fulfillment.

Dr. Blackwell was first elected Senior Warden Easter Monday, April 9, 1927, when the first permanent organization of St. Mary's was effected. Likewise, he was St. Mary's first Sunday School Superintendent, an office he held until two years ago. His services to the Church have been legion. Among his many generous donations is the cross on top of the Church. With his own hands he constructed, assembled and installed all the church furniture except the pulpit, lectern and the bishop's and rector's chairs . . . All honor to a true Christian and a real Virginia gentleman!

\*The Church would not have been built had not Admiral Rixey donated the site and \$12,500 toward its construction.—E. M. B.

### EARLY DAYS AT ST. MARY'S

Officially, the history of St. Mary's began in September 1925, when the Rev. John G. Sadtler, rector of St. John's Episcopal Church, McLean (Langley Parish), wrote Bishop William Cabell Brown of Virginia, recommending a new church for the rapidly growing section of his parish near the Washington Golf and Country Club. Bishop Brown immediately authorized Mr. Sadtler to organize and build a new church. Until the completion of the church, services were held in the nearby Carnes school building.

Land for the site of the present building and an additional \$12,500 was given by Admiral P. M. Rixey . . . greatly facilitating the church construction. Ground for St. Mary's was broken by Bishop Co-adjutor Henry St. George Tucker, June 5, 1926. The cornerstone was laid August 5, 1926, by Bishop Brown. The historic gavel used at this time was the one used by George Washington in laying the cornerstone of the Capitol of the United States in 1793. The church was occupied for the first time Sunday, April 1, 1927 . . . and was organized as a separate mission Easter Monday, April 9, 1927. Mr. Sadtler was the first rector and was in charge until he resigned in September, 1935.

### FOUNDERS OF ST. MARY'S

Admiral and Mrs. P. M. Rixey, Commander and Mrs. E. M. Blackwell, Mr. and Mrs. Walter T. Weaver, Mr. and Mrs. Bertram G. Foster, Mr. and Mrs. Douglas S. Mackall, Mr. and Mrs. T. Turner Smith, Mr. and Mrs. Walter G. Campbell, Mr. and Mrs. Edward Kerschner, Mr. and Mrs. Benjamin L. Jacobs, Mr. and Mrs. John L. Keddy, Mr. and Mrs. Clegge Thomas, Reverend Samuel Small, Mrs. Elizabeth K. Cravens, Mr. and Mrs. George Saegmuller, Dr. and Mrs. Warren F. Draper, Mrs. Fred R. Dudley, Mr. and Mrs. John R. Grunwell, Mr. and Mrs. F. Wilson Camp, Mr. and Mrs. R. S. Billups, Mr. and Mrs. Louis C. Hoffman, Mrs. Joseph G. Dunn.

### RECTORS OF ST. MARY'S

The Rev. John G. Sadtler . . . first service in Carne's School, February, 1926. First service in present church building, April 1, 1927. Resigned September 15, 1935.

The Rev. Peyton R. Williams . . . September 1, 1936—September 1, 1941.

The Rev. George F. Tittmann . . . April 19, 1942—June, 1943 (Entered Chaplain Service of Navy).

The Rev. Robert O. Kevin, Ph.D., Locum Tenens, June 1943—December, 1945.

The Rev. George F. Tittmann . . . January, 1946—